

ElizabethanDrama.org

presents

the Annotated Popular Edition of

The SCORNFUL LADY

by Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher

Performed c. 1609-1610

First published 1616

Featuring complete and easy-to-read annotations.

Annotations and notes © Copyright ElizabethanDrama.org, 2018

This annotated play may be freely copied and distributed.

THE SCORNFUL LADY

By Francis Beaumont
and John Fletcher

Performed c. 1609-1610

First Published 1616

Persons Represented in the Play.

Elder Loveless, a Suitor to the Lady.

Young Loveless, a Prodigal, and brother to Elder Loveless.

Savil, Steward to Elder Loveless.

Lady, target of Elder Loveless' suit.

Martha, the Lady's sister.

Abigail Younglove, a waiting Gentlewoman of the Lady.

Welford, a Suitor to the Lady.

Sir Roger, Curate to the Lady.

Hangers-on of Young Loveless:

Captain.

Traveller.

Poet.

Tobacco-man.

Morecraft, an Usurer.

Widow, a Rich Widow.

Wenches, Fiddlers, Attendants.

The Scene: London

INTRODUCTION TO THE PLAY

The Scornful Lady is a "City Comedy", its scene London; thus, its characters are neither royalty nor nobility, but "regular" citizens. Almost plotless, our play examines the need some people have to manipulate their admirers. A very funny play, *The Scornful Lady* is notable for its extensive use of animal-related insults and imagery. The lecherous old servant Abigail in particular is the target of a great deal of entertaining abuse.

NOTES ON THE TEXT

The text of *The Scornful Lady* is taken from Warwick Bond's edition of the play, as it appears in Volume I of *The Works of Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher*, cited at #3 below.

The Scornful Lady was published multiple times in the 17th century, the first time in 1616; as is the normal practice on this website, our edition remains faithful to the original 1616 quarto to the greatest degree possible.

NOTES ON THE ANNOTATIONS

Mention of Bond, Dyce, Colman and Weber in the annotations refers to the notes provided by each of these editors in their respective editions of this play, each cited fully below.

The most commonly cited sources are listed in the footnotes immediately below. The complete list of footnotes appears at the end of this play.

Footnotes in the text correspond as follows:

1. OED online.
2. Crystal, David and Ben. *Shakespeare's Words*. London; New York: Penguin, 2002.
3. Bond, R. Warwick, ed. *The Works of Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher*, Volume I. London: George Bell & Sons and A. H. Bullen, 1904.
4. Dyce, Alexander. *The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1879.
7. Colman, George. *The Dramatic Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. London: Printed for John Stockdale, 1811.
9. Weber, Henry. *The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. Edinburgh: James Ballantyne and Company, 1812.

NOTE on the IAMBIC PENTAMETER

Most of *The Scornful Lady* was originally published in prose; early editors, however, recognized that much of this prose was clearly written in iambs, and many of the speeches could easily be broken up into iambic, or near iambic, pentameter.

As a result, many early editors, such as Alexander Dyce and Warwick Bond, did exactly that. And while they did not always agree on exactly how every speech should be divided, their decision to do so was the correct one. The edition you have in front of you employ's Bond's divisions.

The concerned reader, however, may still wonder why it is that so many of the lines in *The Scornful Lady* are irregular; after all, both Beaumont and Fletcher were perfectly capable of writing in strict iambic pentameter when they wanted to. So why do so many lines contain extra syllables, or slip momentarily into meters other than iambic? One may rightfully ask whether these speeches should really be presented in verse at all.

Editor R. Warwick Bond presents in his notes to B&F's *A King and No King* a solid argument for printing the questionable speeches as verse: recognizing that the lines contain too much "metrical suggestion" to believe the authors intended them to be presented as prose, Bond argues that the verse is really a hybrid of prose and pure, strict iambic pentameter, so as to make the speech less stylized than that which might be given to nobles and other higher-ranked members of society; the verse was therefore *intentionally* made less regular by our authors to make the speeches more fitting for the more earthy members of "ordinary" society who populate the play.

As a result, it is suggested that you generally not concern yourself terribly with following the iambic pentameter as you read *The Scornful Lady*. There are plenty of other challenges with respect to the play's language, numerous literary and topical allusions, and dense metaphors to keep your intellect occupied.

AUTHORSHIP.

E.H.C. Oliphant (*The Plays of Beaumont and Fletcher*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1927), in his study of the collaborations of Beaumont and Fletcher, assigns to our two authors the following scenes:

Beaumont: Act I.i; Act II.i; first part of Act IV.i; Act V.ii.

Fletcher: Act I.ii; Act II.ii and iii; Act III; second part of Act IV.i, and all of Act IV.ii; Act V.i, iii and iv.

The OBSESIVE USE of the WORD CAST.

Wordsmiths will be interested to pay attention to the recurring use of the word *cast*, with so many of its meanings, throughout the play - a total of 17 appearances. It is employed by our authors as a verb, a noun, and an adjective, as well as in various phrases.

By itself, *cast* is used to mean

(1) to bestow; to scheme or contrive; to toss (present tense verbs); and schemed (past tense verb);

(2) pair; and analysis (nouns); and

(3) dismissed (adjective).

In addition, *cast* appears in the following expressions:
cast off (meaning to cast off; thrown away; and dismissed);
cast a fortune (to diagram the arrangement of the planets as part of an astrological forecast);
bridling cast (a parting drink);
cast up (to vomit);
cast up a reckoning (to make a calculation); and
cast one's eyes upon (to look or glance upon).

SETTINGS, SCENE BREAKS
and STAGE DIRECTIONS.

The original editions of *The Scornful Lady* did not identify scene settings, nor were there any scene breaks; we have adopted those suggested by Bond.

As is our normal practice, some stage directions have been added, and some modified, for purposes of clarity. Most of these minor changes are adopted from Bond and Dyce.

THE SCORNFUL LADY

By Francis Beaumont
and John Fletcher

c. 1609-1610

ACT I.

SCENE I.

A Room in Lady's House.

Enter the two Lovelesses, Savil the Steward, and a Page.

1 **Elder.** Brother, is your last hope past to mollify
2 Morecraft's heart about your mortgage?
4 **Young.** Hopelessly past. I have presented the usurer

with a richer draught than ever Cleopatra swallowed; he

6 hath sucked in ten thousand pounds worth of my land,
more than he paid for, at a gulp, without trumpets.
8 **Elder.** I have as hard a task to perform in this house.
10 **Young.** Faith, mine was to make an usurer honest, or
12 to lose my land.
14 **Elder.** And mine is to persuade a passionate woman,
or to leave the land. – Savil, make the boat stay.
16
18 [Exit Page.]

Entering Characters: the two *Lovelesses* are brothers; *Elder Loveless* is courting the unnamed *Lady*, whose house they have entered; *Savil*, an elderly man dressed in old-fashioned livery, is the steward of Elder.

Lady, the title character, and an obnoxious and selfish woman, has decided that if *Elder* wants to continue to woo her, he must travel to France for a year.

Elder's younger brother, *Young Loveless*, is a spendthrift, who, by failing to make payments on his mortgage, has forfeited all of his property to the money-lender Morecraft.

= *Morecraft* is a money-lender, typically referred to in Elizabethan drama as a *usurer*.

4-7: Young uses an extended drinking metaphor to describe Morecraft's taking possession of all of his property, and thus his wealth, thanks to his defaulting on the loan Morecraft has made to him; in this era, a failure to make a single payment could lead to the loss of one's entire security, hence Young's allusion in line 7 to Morecraft receiving *more than he paid for*.

5: *richer draught* = more powerful drink or potion.

Cleopatra = Plutarch wrote in his *Lives* that Cleopatra enjoyed testing the effects of various poisons on condemned prisoners; she herself died by the bite of an asp, to avoid being taken prisoner by Octavian.

= drawn or drunk in.

= without a flourish of trumpets as would normally accompany the drinking of healths at public functions.³

15: *leave the land* = these words parallel Young's *lose my land* in form and alliteration.
stay = wait.

17: Savil passes the instruction on to the Page, who leaves to carry it out.

20 I fear I shall begin my unfortunate journey this night,
 though the darkness of the night, and the roughness of
 the waters, might easily dissuade an unwilling man.

22 **Sav.** Sir, your father's old friends hold it the sounder

24 course for your body and estate to stay at home, and
 marry and propagate – and govern in your country –
 26 than to travel for disease, and return following the court

in a night-cap, and die without issue.

28 **Elder.** Savil, you shall gain the opinion of a better
 30 servant in seeking to execute, not alter, my will,
 howsoever my intents succeed.

32 **Young.** Yonder's Mistress Younglove, brother, the
 34 grave rubber of your mistress' toes.

36 *Enter Abigail Younglove, the waiting woman.*

38 **Elder.** Mistress Younglove –
 40 **Abig.** Master Loveless, truly we thought your sails
 had been hoist: my mistress is persuaded you are
 42 sea-sick ere this.

44 **Elder.** Loves she her ill-taken-up resolution so
 dearly? Didst thou move her for me?

46 **Abig.** By this light that shines, there's no removing

48 her, if she get a stiff opinion by the end. I attempted her

23f: Savil tries to dissuade his master from taking this foolish trip to France.

hold it = "maintain that it is".

the sounder = meaning both more (1) healthy in body, and (2) financially secure, describing Elder's **body and estate** respectively in the next line (24).

= fortune, property.

26: **for disease** = ie. to treat or to pick up some disease, perhaps referring specifically to venereal disease, which was often associated with France, where Elder must travel; the terms *French pox* and *French measles* appear frequently in literature of the time to refer to syphilis.¹

following the court = when a once-wealthy man's own property has been consumed, he might become a follower of the court.³

27: **night-cap** = worn because of the chronic disease he has picked up.³

issue = children.

= reputation for being.

= a little confusingly, Lady's servant, **Abigail Younglove**, is sometimes referred to by her last name, sometimes her first.

= Young appears to pun on "grave robber".

Entering Character: Abigail Younglove is Lady's servant; the OED conjectures that the word **abigail** came to mean "female servant" because of its use in this play.

40-41: **your sails...hoist** = ie. "you had already set sail."

= "before this time", ie. "by now."

= "try to persuade her on my behalf?"

47: **By this...shines** = typical Elizabethan oath affirming the truth of something.

47-48: **there's no...the end** = "there's no dissuading her once she stubbornly adheres to a position";¹ but there is a double entendre here - Abigail is prone, in the best tradition of the dirty-minded female servant, to be bawdy: according to Partridge, **end** could be used to refer to a man's member, so that with **stiff** the line takes on an entirely different - and rather indelicate - meaning.

= ie. "tried to persuade".

50	to-day <u>when</u> they say a woman can deny nothing.	= ie. at the moment.
52	Elder. What critical minute was that?	
54	Abig. When <u>her smock was over her ears</u> : but she was no more pliant than <u>if it hung about her heels</u> .	= ie. "she was undressing"; smock = undergarment. = perhaps meaning "when Lady was using the water closet."
56	Elder. <u>I prithee, deliver my service</u> , and say, I desire to see <u>the dear cause of my banishment</u> ; and then	= "I pray thee", ie. please. = "commend me to her".
58	<u>France</u> .	= ie. Lady. = "I'll be off to France."
60	Abig. I'll do't. <u>Hark hither</u> ; is that your brother?	= "listen here".
62	Elder. Yes: have you lost your memory?	
64	Abig. As I live, he's a pretty fellow.	64: Abigail will readily admit her attraction to the two main young male characters of the play.
66		
	[Exit Abigail.]	
68	Young. Oh, this is a sweet <u>brach</u> !	= bitch hound; ¹ many of the characters will be quite open in their abuse of Abigail.
70	Elder. Why she knows not you.	
72	Young. No, but she offered me once to <u>know</u> her.	= Young plays on the word know , which was a common term for "having sexual relations with."
	To this day she loves <u>youth</u> of eighteen. She <u>heard</u> a tale	73: youth = ie. young men. heard = as Dyce suggests, perhaps this should be had , meaning "knew" or "told".
74	how <u>Cupid struck her in love</u> with a great lord in the <u>Tilt-yard</u> , but he never saw her; yet she in kindness,	= ie. Cupid , the god of love, caused a maiden to fall in love by shooting her with one of his arrows. = arena for a jousting tournament.
76	<u>would needs</u> wear a <u>willow-garland</u> at his wedding. <u>She</u>	76: woulds need = felt obliged to. willow = a symbol for rejected love. She = ie. Abigail.
	loved all the <u>players</u> in the last queen's time <u>once over</u> ;	77: ie. "fell in love with each of the actors (players) she saw on stage during the reign of Elizabeth I." Our play was written during the reign of James I - Elizabeth had died in 1603.
78	she was struck when they acted lovers, and forsook	78-79: she was...murtherers = she particularly fell for those actors when they played lovers, but abandoned them when they played villains. = murderers.
	some when they played <u>murtherers</u> . She has nine	
80	<u>spur-royals</u> , and the servants say she hoards old gold;	= relatively new gold coins struck during the reign of James I, worth 15 shillings; they were called spur royals because of the resemblance of the star or sun, which was pictured with its rays on the reverse side, to the rowel (revolving wheel) of a spur. ^{1,3}
	and she herself pronounces <u>angrily</u> that the farmer's	= alternate word for angrily ; angrily generally went out of fashion in the 17th century. ¹
82	eldest son (or her mistress' husband's <u>clerk</u> that shall	81-82: her mistress'...shall be = Abigail expects to marry the clergyman (clerk) of Lady's now-deceased husband; the reference is to Roger, a parson who seems to live in Lady's household, and a character whom we will soon meet. As will

84 be) that marries her, shall make her a jointure of
fourscore pounds a year. She tells tales of the serving-
men –

86 **Elder.** Enough, I know her, brother. I shall entreat you
88 only to salute my mistress, and take leave: we'll part
at the stairs.

90 *Enter Lady and Abigail.*

92 **Lady.** Now, sir, this first part of your will is performed:
94 what's the rest?

96 **Elder.** First, let me beg your notice for this gentleman,
my brother: I shall take it as a favour done to me.

98 **Lady.** Though the gentleman hath received but an
100 untimely grace from you, yet my charitable disposition
would have been ready to have done him freer
102 courtesies as a stranger, than upon those cold
commendations.

104 **Young.** Lady, my salutations crave acquaintance and
106 leave at once.

108 **Lady.** Sir, I hope you are the master of your own
occasions.

110 *[Exit Younglove and Savil.]*

112 **Elder.** Would I were so! Mistress, for me to praise
114 over again that worth, which all the world and you
yourself can see –

116 **Lady.** It's a cold room this; servant.

118 **Elder.** Mistress –

120 **Lady.** What think you if I have a chimney for't, out
122 here?

124 **Elder.** Mistress, another in my place, that were not
tied to believe all your actions just, would apprehend

become clear, Roger and Abigail have an "understanding".

= a marriage settlement made by a groom to provide for his
bride, should he predecease her; Abigail intends to marry
a reasonably wealthy man, whose land can provide 80
pounds a year in rent.

87: Elder interrupts; he can hear no more.

entreat = ask.

= greet.

93-94: Lady's obnoxious personality is apparent from her
first line: "ok, I performed the first thing you asked for -
which was to see me; now what?"

= ie. "ask you to greet or acknowledge".

= the original editions print this clause as the first line of
Lady's speech immediately below, but we follow Bond
and Dyce in giving it to Elder.

99-100: **Though...from you** = ie. "although this is not the
right time for you to be introducing me to your brother."
untimely = at an improper time, unseasonable.¹

100-3: **yet my...commendations** = "yet thanks to my
naturally generous character, I would gladly give him the
warm welcome that he, as a stranger, deserves, and one
that is more magnanimous than your ineffective intro-
duction would suggest he should receive." Lady is highly
unpleasant!

= permission to be excused; the lines exchanged by Lady
and Young are courteously formulaic.

108-9: ie. "sir, I expect you may do as you wish."

= circumstances.

113: **Would I were so** = ie. "I wish I had control over my
own circumstances!" Perhaps an aside.

113ff: Elder's flattery and formal language of courting
is painfully trite and ineffective.

117ff: Lady ignores Elder's wooing.

servant = common term for a professed or authorized
lover or wooer; used here as a vocative expression for
Elder.

124-6: **another...wronged** = "if you had treated anyone else
the way you treat me, he would feel insulted."

126	himself wronged: but I, whose virtues are <u>constancy</u>	= loyalty.
	and obedience –	
128	<i>Lady.</i> Younglove, make a good fire above, to warm me	
130	after my servant's <u>exordiums</u> .	= (long-winded) introductory remarks. ¹
132	<i>Elder.</i> I have heard and seen your affability to be	132-3: Lady's affability is such that she allows her servants
	such, that the servants you give wages to may speak.	to speak their minds.
134	<i>Lady.</i> 'Tis true, 'tis true; but they speak <u>to the purpose</u> .	= "to the point (unlike you)".
136	<i>Elder.</i> Mistress, your will leads my speeches from the	
138	purpose. But as a man –	
140	<i>Lady.</i> A simile, servant? This room was built for honest	= ie. people who have something substantive to say. ¹
	<u>meaners</u> , that deliver themselves hastily and plainly,	
142	and are gone. Is this a time or place for exordiums, and	= anything.
	similes and metaphors? If you have <u>ought</u> to say, break	= "respond to what you say."
144	into 't: my answers shall very reasonably <u>meet you</u> .	
146	<i>Elder.</i> Mistress, I came to see you.	
148	<i>Lady.</i> That's happily dispatched; the next?	148: "great, that objective has been met; what's next?"
150	<i>Elder.</i> To take leave of you.	
152	<i>Lady.</i> To be gone?	
154	<i>Elder.</i> Yes.	
156	<i>Lady.</i> You need not have despaired of that, nor have	= so much unnecessary verbiage. ²
	used <u>so many circumstances</u> to win me to give you	158: "permission to follow my instructions; is there a third
158	leave to perform my command; is there a third?	thing you want from me?"
160	<i>Elder.</i> Yes, I had a third, had you been <u>apt</u> to hear it.	= disposed. ¹
162	<i>Lady.</i> I! never apter. <u>Fast</u> , good <u>servant</u> , fast.	= "speak quickly" or "get to the point". = wooer or lover.
164	<i>Elder.</i> 'Twas to entreat you to hear reason.	
166	<i>Lady.</i> Most willingly: have you brought <u>one can</u> speak	= anyone who can.
	it?	
168	<i>Elder.</i> Lastly, it is to kindle in that barren heart love	
170	and forgiveness.	
172	<i>Lady.</i> You <u>would</u> stay at home?	= would prefer to.
174	<i>Elder.</i> Yes, lady.	
176	<i>Lady.</i> Why, you may, and doubtlessly will, when you	= instructor, ie. Lady herself.
	have debated that your <u>commander</u> is but your mistress,	178: Lady is highly sarcastic.
178	a woman, a weak one, wildly <u>overborne</u> with passions;	<i>overborne</i> = overcome. ¹
	but the thing by her commanded is, to see Dover's	179-182: Lady teases Elder regarding the supposedly dan-
180	<u>dreadful</u> cliff; passing, in a poor <u>water-house</u> , the	gerous trip across the Channel to France. ⁸
	dangers of the merciless channel 'twixt that and Calais,	179-180: <i>to see...cliff</i> = ie. to sail to France; the
182	five long hours sail, with three poor weeks' victuals.	famous white cliffs of Dover would be visible from a

184 **Elder.** You wrong me.

186 **Lady.** Then to land dumb, unable to enquire for an
English host, to remove from city to city by most
188 chargeable post-horse, like one that rode in quest of his
mother tongue.

190 **Elder.** You wrong me much.

192 **Lady.** And all these (almost invincible) labours
194 performed for your mistress, to be in danger to forsake
her, and to put on new allegiance to some French
196 lady, who is content to change language with you for

laughter; and after your whole year spent in tennis and
198 broken speech, to stand to the hazard of being laughed

at, on your return, and have tales made on you by the
200 chamber-maids.

202 **Elder.** You wrong me much.

204 **Lady.** Louder yet.

206 **Elder.** You know your least word is of force to make
me seek out dangers; move me not with toys. But in this
208 banishment, I must take leave to say you are unjust.
Was one kiss forced from you in public by me so
210 unpardonable? Why, all the hours of day and night have
seen us kiss.

212 **Lady.** 'Tis true, and so you satisfied the company that
214 heard me chide.

216 **Elder.** Your own eyes were not dearer to you than I.

218 **Lady.** And so you told 'em.

220 **Elder.** I did, yet no sign of disgrace need to have
stained your cheek: you yourself knew your pure and
222 simple heart to be most unspotted, and free from the
least baseness.

224 **Lady.** I did; But if a maid's heart doth but once think
226 that she is suspected, her own face will write her guilty.

228 **Elder.** But where lay this disgrace? The world that

boat sailing to Calais on the French shore.

dreadful (line 180) = formidable.¹

water-house (line 180) = ie. boat.¹

= metaphorically unable to speak, since Elder does not speak French; even at this remote time, the English were well known for their lack of foreign language skills.

= ie. move.

= expensive rented horses.¹

= the phrase **mother tongue** has been in use at least as far back as 1425.¹

= impossible to perform;¹ Lady remains sarcastic.

194-7: **to be...laughter** = Lady gives Elder additional instructions: "to risk abandoning me by taking up a relationship with some French lady, who for her own great amusement will teach you to speak French (**change language**)."³

By **your mistress** (line 194) and **her** (line 195), Lady means herself.

= risk; Lady puns on **hazard**, which refers to the receiving side of a **tennis** serve.¹

= told about.

204: ie. "speak up;" Elder may be mumbling.

= ie. spur on or anger. = trifles, mocking speech.¹

209-211: Elder suggests Lady is sending him to France as penance for his sin of taking liberties with her in public.

213-4: Lady apparently reproached Elder for kissing her in front of his friends, but his attempts to justify the act, heard by his friends, only compounded his offense.

satisfied = convinced, persuaded.⁹

= free from disgrace or moral stain.

228f: Elder pleads his case: since everyone knew of their intimate relationship, where was the harm in what he

	knew us, knew our resolutions well: and could it be	had done?
230	hoped that I should give away my freedom, and venture	229-231: <i>could it...kissed</i> = "can you expect (<i>hoped</i> =
232	a perpetual bondage with one I never kissed? or <u>could I</u> ,	expected) that I would tie myself to you - and thus deny
234	in <u>strict</u> wisdom, take too much love upon me from her	myself forever-after the company of other women - when
	that chose me for her husband?	you refuse to kiss me?"
	<i>Lady.</i> Believe me, if my <u>wedding-smock</u> were on;	= ie. "is it possible for me to".
		= true. ¹
		235-243: <i>Believe me...wed that year</i> = a very long, typical
		Elizabethan stage sentence; the sense is, no matter how far
		the preparations for her hypothetical wedding have gotten, if
		her fiancé had bragged once that she had shown him any
		partiality (line 242), she would call the whole thing off.
		Lady's numerous examples of such wedding preparations
		are separated by semi-colons; the bulk of the sentence, then,
		is made up of premises [" <i>were</i> (ie. <i>if</i>) this and <i>were</i> that"],
		ending with the conclusion (<i>I would not wed that year</i>) all
		the way down in line 243.
		<i>wedding smock</i> = <i>smock</i> normally refers to a woman's
		undergarment, so perhaps Lady is referring to a special
		undergarment worn for one's wedding night.
		Lines 236-241 are frequently cited for their examples of
		some of the wedding customs of the early 17th century.
236	<u>Were</u> the gloves bought and given, the license come;	= <i>were</i> in this line, and in lines 237, 239, and 241, means
	Were the <u>rosemary</u> -branches dipt, and all	"even if".
238	The <u>hippocras</u> and cakes eat and drunk off;	= <i>rosemary</i> , representing remembrance, commonly
	Were these two arms encompassed with the hands	decorated weddings and funerals.
240	Of <u>bachelors</u> , to lead me to the church;	= a type of spiced wine that has been strained through a
		flannel filter. ³
		= <i>bachelor</i> normally referred to an unmarried man, but it
		seems likely that "unmarried women" is meant here; Ben
		Jonson, in his 1632 comedy <i>The Magnetic Lady</i> , uses
		<i>bachelor</i> clearly to refer to a female.
242	Were my feet in the door; were " <u>I John</u> " said;	= likely an assenting phrase, " <i>ay, John</i> ", like "I do"; <i>John</i>
244	If John should boast a favour done by me,	was used as a generic name for any man. ¹
246	I would not wed that year. And you, I hope,	= profitably. ¹
	When you have spent this year <u>commodiously</u> ,	246: "be a little more reserved in bragging about my regard
	In achieving languages, will, at your return,	for you".
	Acknowledge me more coy of parting with mine eyes,	= lover.
248	Than such a <u>friend</u> . More talk I hold not now:	
250	If you dare, go.	
252	<i>Elder.</i> I dare, you know. First let me kiss.	252: although not stated explicitly in a stage direction, Lady
	<i>Lady.</i> Farewell sweet servant. Your task performed,	likely gives Elder a modest parting kiss.
	On a new ground, <u>as a beginning suitor</u> ,	= ie. Lady will require Elder, on his return from France after
254	I shall be apt to hear you.	a year's absence, to start his courtship all over again!
256	<i>Elder.</i> Farewell cruèl mistress.	
258	[<i>Exeunt Lady and Abigail.</i>]	

260 *Enter Young Loveless and Savil.*

262 **Young.** Brother, you'll hazard the losing your tide
to Gravesend; you have a long half mile by land to

264 Greenwich.

266 **Elder.** I go. But, brother, what yet-unheard-of course
to live doth imagination flatter you with? your
268 ordinary means are devoured.

270 **Young.** Course! Why, horse-coursing, I think.

272 Consume no time in this: I have no state to be mended
by meditation: he that busies himself about my fortunes
may properly be said to busy himself about nothing.

274 **Elder.** Yet some course you must take, which, for my
276 satisfaction, resolve and open; if you will shape none, I
must inform you, that that man but persuades himself
278 he means to live, that imagines not the means.

280 **Young.** Why, live upon others, as others have lived
upon me.

282 **Elder.** I apprehend not that. You have fed others, and
284 consequently disposed of 'em; and the same measure
must you expect from your maintainers, which will be
286 too heavy an alteration for you to bear.

288 **Young.** Why, I'll purse; if that raise me not, I'll bet at

bowling-alleys, or man whores; I would fain live by

= risk.

= a town east of London and on the Thames, *Gravesend*
was the normal embarkation point for boats to France.⁶
= once the site of a great royal palace, *Greenwich*, on the
Thames, would have been from where Elder would have
sailed down to Gravesend.

266-8: "how do you expect to live while I am gone? You
have no money left."

= Young puns on *course*.

The editors understand *horse-coursing* to mean horse-
dealing, ie. the buying and selling of horses for profit,
though Bond suggests that *horse coursing* is properly *horse*
scorsing (the two phrases would sound the same), *scorsing*
meaning trading or exchanging; we may note that *coursing*
also meant "racing".¹

271-2: *Consume...meditation* = "don't spend a moment
worrying about me; my situation won't improve by
thinking about it."

= determine on and declare.⁹ = fashion.¹

= "is only fooling himself".

= ie. "who does actually have a plan for how to do so."

Elder handsomely puns on *means*.

= ie. "I will live off the generosity of others".

= understand.

= subsequently.³

284-6: *the same...to bear* = "you should expect that
those who support you for a while will eventually cease
to do so; when this happens, you will not be able to
handle it."

288-9: *I'll purse...whores* = Young itemizes, in Colman's
delightful words, "three of the most despicable modes of
acquiring subsistence to which mankind can be reduced"
(p. 112).

purse = ie. steal purses.³

raise me not = ie. "fails to raise my fortunes".

bet = ie. gamble.

289: *bowling alleys* = *bowling alley* describes the green on
which to play the oft referred-to game of *bowls*; *bowls* may
be thought of as an old English version of *bocce*, in which
larger, heavier balls are rolled to get as near as possible to a
smaller ball; an interesting variation in bowls is that the
larger balls were unevenly weighted, allowing a skilled
bowler to take advantage of the balls' tendency to curve (a
quality known as "bias").

The term *bowling alley* itself goes back at least to 1412.¹
man whores = be an escort or attendant for prostitutes.^{3,7}

290 others. But I'll live whilst I am unhangd, and after the
292 thought's taken.

294 **Elder.** I see you are tied to no particular employment,
then!

296 **Young.** Faith, I may choose my course: they say
Nature brings forth none but she provides for them;

298 I'll try her liberality.

300 **Elder.** Well, to keep your feet out of base and
dangerous paths, I have resolved you shall live as
302 master of my house. – It shall be your care, Savil, to
see him fed and clothed, not according to his present
304 estate, but to his birth and former fortunes.

306 **Young.** If it be referred to him, if I be not found in
carnation Jersey-stockings, blue devils' breeches, with

308 three guards down, and my pocket i'th' sleeves, I'll ne'er
look you i'th' face again.

310 **Sav.** A comelier wear, I wus, it is than those dangling
312 slops.

314 **Elder.** To keep you ready to do him all service
peaceably, and him to command you reasonably, I leave
316 these further directions in writing, which at your best
leisure, together open and read.

318 *Re-enter Abigail to them with a jewel.*

320 **Abig.** Sir, my mistress commends her love to you in
322 this token and these words: it is a jewel, she says,
which, as a favour from her, she would request you to
324 wear till your year's travel be performed; which, once

fain = be happy to, prefer to.

= "so long as I have not been hangd".

290-1: *after the thought's taken* = "according to the thought that first strikes me", or "by any means I can think of" (Weber, p. 148), or "after sentence of hanging has been passed" (Bond, who says Weber is wrong, p. 370).

297: nature produces nothing that it is not able to supply provisions for.
= test Nature's generosity.

302-4: *It shall...fortunes* = Savil should supply money to and generally provide for Young in a manner suitable for his rank (a gentleman) and his former wealth, and not as would only be fitting for a poor man, which describes Young's present condition.
Note that the dash in line 302 signals that the speaker will next address a different character.

306-9: if Young is forced to depend on Savil for his provisioning, then he can expect to be very poorly provided for indeed.

307: *carnation* = flesh-coloured or pink.¹
Jersey-stockings = stockings made of wool, and hence inferior.³
blue devils' breeches = close-fitting hose, as would have been worn by the character of the devil in the old morality plays;³ such tight-fitting stockings were out of fashion by the early 17th century.

308: *guards* = ornamental trimmings or embroidered borders;^{1,3} Weber suggests that "waistband" is meant here.
pocket i'th' sleeves = pockets could not be fitted onto the tight-fitting breeches, so they would have to be situated elsewhere.³

= more agreeable. = indeed or truly; usually written *iwis*.¹

311-2: *dangling slops* = the more fashionable loose-fitting hose of the early 17th century, which Young is wearing.³

= Young, as the temporary master of Elder's home, may give reasonable instructions to the steward.

= symbol of affection.

expired, she will hastily expect your happy return.

326

328 **Elder.** Return my service, with such thanks, as she
may imagine the heart of a suddenly over-joyed man
would willingly utter: and you, I hope, I shall, with

330 slender arguments, persuade to wear this diamond; that

332 when my mistress shall, through my long absence and
the approach of new suitors, offer to forget me, you

334 may call your eye down to your finger, and remember
and speak of me. She will hear thee better than those

336 allied by birth to her; as we see many men much
swayed by the grooms of their chambers, – not that
they have a greater part of their love or opinion on them

338 as on others, but for that they know their secrets.

340 **Abig.** O' my credit, I swear I think 'twas made for me.
Fear no other suitors.

342 **Elder.** I shall not need to teach you how to discredit

344 their beginnings: you know how to take exception at
their shirts at washing, or to make the maids swear they

346 found plasters in their beds.

348 **Abig.** I know, I know, and do not you fear the suitors.

350 **Elder.** Farewell; be mindful, and be happy; the night
calls me.

352 [*Exeunt omnes praeter Abigail.*]

354 **Abig.** The gods of the winds befriend you, sir!

356 a constant and a liberal lover thou art: more such
God send us.

358 *Enter Welford.*

360

= impatiently.⁷
Is this last clause intended to be ambiguous, suggesting
that it is the jewel Lady expects to be returned to her, and
not Elder?

329-330: **and you...diamond** = Elder gives Abigail a jewel
as well to wear in return for her doing a favour for him.
= "slight or trifling means of persuasion" (OED),¹ ie. Elder
expects he will not have to twist Abigail's arm to get her
to accept the diamond.

331-4: **when my...speak of me** = "if Lady seems interested
in another man, then seeing this diamond will prompt you
to defend my interest in Lady's affection."

334-335: **She will...birth to her** = a common notion, that
one's servants are one's most trustworthy confidants.

336: **swayed** = ie. more influenced.
grooms = servants.
336-8: **not that...secrets** = a cynical conclusion to
the previous thought: servants are more persuasive in
influencing their masters' and mistresses' actions because
they are aware of, and therefore in a position to reveal,
their employers' secrets!
as (line 338) = than; later editions print **than** here.

343-6: Elder suggests ways Abigail can make a prospective
suitor of Lady's appear less attractive to her.

344: **beginnings** = origins, ie. their social backgrounds.
344-5: **take exception...washing** = Abigail should,
when doing the wash, find reason to criticize the shirts,
and thus all the clothing, of any suitors which may be
staying at the house.

= curatives applied to the skin;¹ the appearance of such
medical supplies would suggest a suitor is suffering from
some loathsome disease.

353: all exit but for Abigail.

355: Abigail wishes Elder a safe crossing over the Channel,
whose contrary winds frequently interrupted travel plans.

= loyal and generous.

Entering Character: it has not taken long for Lady's first
suitor, **Welford**, a good-natured fellow, to arrive.

<p>362 Wel. [<i>To servant <u>without</u></i>] Let 'em not stand still, we have rid hard.</p> <p>364 Abig. [<i>Aside</i>] A suitor, I know, by his riding hard: I'll <u>not be seen</u>.</p> <p>366</p> <p>368 Wel. A pretty hall this: no servant in't? I would look freshly.</p> <p>370</p> <p>372 Abig. [<i>Aside</i>] You have delivered your errand to me, then: there's no danger in a handsome young fellow; I'll show myself. [<i>Advances.</i>]</p> <p>374 Wel. Lady, may it please you to bestow upon a stranger <u>the ordinary grace of salutation</u>? are you the lady of this house?</p> <p>376</p> <p>378 Abig. Sir, I am worthily proud to be a servant of hers.</p> <p>380 Wel. Lady, I should be as proud to be a <u>servant</u> of yours, did not my so late acquaintance make me despair.</p> <p>382</p> <p>384 Abig. Sir, it is not so hard to achieve, but nature may bring it about.</p> <p>386</p> <p>388 Wel. For these <u>comfortable</u> words, I remain your glad debtor. Is your lady at home?</p> <p>390 Abig. She is no <u>straggler</u>, sir.</p> <p>392 Wel. May her <u>occasions</u> admit me to speak with her?</p> <p>394 Abig. If you come in the way of a suitor, no.</p> <p>396 Wel. I know your affable virtue will be <u>moved</u> to persuade her, that a gentleman, <u>benighted and strayed</u>,</p> <p>398 offers to be bound to her for a night's lodging.</p> <p>400 Abig. I will commend this message to her; but if you aim <u>at her body</u>, you will be deluded. Other women the</p> <p>402 house holds, of <u>good carriage and government</u>; upon</p> <p>any of which if you can cast your affection, they will</p> <p>404 perhaps be found as faithful, and <u>not so coy</u>.</p> <p>406 [Exit.]</p> <p>408 Wel. What a skin full of lust is this! I thought I had come a-wooing, and I am the courted party. This is</p> <p>410 right court-fashion: men, women, and all, woo; catch</p>	<p>= offstage. = ie. his horses, which need to be walked to cool off after some hard riding.</p> <p>= Abigail momentarily hides from the entering Welford.</p> <p>367-8: it was a convention of Elizabethan drama for characters to express their thoughts out loud, even when they are alone, to the benefit of those who are eaves-dropping nearby.</p> <p>370-2: Welford's speech confirms to Abigail that he has indeed arrived to woo Lady; but we will not be surprised to find Abigail willing to make herself available to him.</p> <p>= ie. a kiss; it was the custom in England for even strangers to kiss upon greeting each other; but Welford is mistaken as to Abigail's identity.</p> <p>= devotee or lover; in this speech, Welford is courteously flattering: he expects other men to already have claims on Abigail.</p> <p>384: Abigail flirts more directly with Welford, taking <i>servant</i> to mean "lover".</p> <p>= encouraging.¹</p> <p>= vagabond, one who wanders about aimlessly.¹</p> <p>= circumstances.</p> <p>= induced.</p> <p>= ie. finding himself without a place to stay at night;¹ there may also be a pun with "benighted."</p> <p>398: "asks from her a place to spend the night, a favour for which I will be indebted to her."</p> <p>401: <i>at her body</i> = ie. "to see her in person", but of course suggestive as well.</p> <p>401-2: <i>Other women the house holds</i> = "there are other women in this house"; Abigail is hinting at her own availability.</p> <p>= good bearing (in her case, possibly) and good conduct or behaviour (less likely).</p> <p>= ie. not as modest (as other women in the house might be).</p> <p>409-410: <i>This is...all woo</i> = typical comment of the era on the loose morals of English court-life under James I.</p> <p>410-1: <i>catch that catch may</i> = an early version of <i>catch</i></p>
--	--

that catch may. If this soft hearted woman have infused
412 any of her tenderness into her lady, there is hope she
will be pliant. But who's here?

414
416 *Enter Sir Roger the Curate.*

418 **Roger.** God save you sir. My lady lets you know, she
desires to be acquainted with your name, before she
420 confer with you.

422 **Wel.** Sir, my name calls me Welford.

424 **Roger.** Sir, you are a gentleman of a good name.
[*Aside*] I'll try his wit.

426 **Wel.** I will uphold it as good as any of my ancestors
had this two hundred years, sir.

428 **Roger.** I knew a worshipful and a religious gentleman
430 of your name in the bishopric of Durham: call you him
cousin?

432 **Wel.** I am only allied to his virtues, sir.

434 **Roger.** It is modestly said: I should carry the badge of
436 your Christianity with me too.

438 **Wel.** What's that, a cross? There's a tester.

440 **Roger.** I mean the name which your godfathers and
godmothers gave you at the font.

442 **Wel.** 'Tis Harry. But you cannot proceed orderly now
444 in your catechism; for you have told me who gave me
that name. Shall I beg your name?

446

448 **Roger.** Roger.

448 **Wel.** What room fill you in this house?

450

as catch can, a phrase which goes as far back as the
14th century, meaning "get a hold of something any
way one can" (OED).¹

412: *tenderness* = compassion or considerateness.¹

lady = ie. mistress.

she = ie. Lady.

Entering Character: Roger is the household cleric; he is
wearing a night-cap on his head. **Sir** was a common title
for clergymen.

= a common motif in Elizabethan drama: a clever person
decides to test (*try*) the ability of another to engage in
witty conversation.

= ie. "my name".

= diocese: Roger only means that he knew a man with the
name Welford who lived in Durham.

433: a right witty response!

435-6: *I should...me too* = Roger means he would like to
know his visitor's name, but this is unclear to Welford
at the moment: Roger is being playfully enigmatic, but
he will explain his joke at lines 440-1.

= a slang term for a coin known as a *teston*, which first
appeared under Henry VII, and bore the image of a
cross on one face.^{1,3} Welford is up to meeting Roger
pun for pun!

= ie. the baptismal font.

443-5: the *catechism* is a series of questions and answers
used to instruct those converting to or being confirmed
in the Christian faith. In the English *Book of Common
Prayer*, first published in 1549, the first two questions and
answers of the catechism are as follows:

(1) Q - "What is your name?" A - (name);

(2) Q - "Who gave you this name?" A - "The Godfathers
and Godmothers at my Baptism, etc."

So, Welford is humorously pointing out how Roger has
asked him the second question without having yet received
an answer to the first!

= position, office.

<p>452</p> <p>454</p> <p>456</p> <p>458</p> <p>460</p> <p>462</p> <p>464</p> <p>466</p> <p>468</p> <p>470</p> <p>472</p> <p>474</p> <p>476</p> <p>478</p> <p>480</p> <p>482</p> <p>484</p> <p>486</p> <p>488</p> <p>490</p> <p>492</p> <p>494</p>	<p>Roger. More rooms than one.</p> <p>Wel. <u>The more the merrier</u>. But may my boldness know why your lady hath sent you to <u>decipher</u> my name?</p> <p>Roger. Her own words were these: to know whether you were a formerly-denied suitor, disguised in this message; for I can assure you she delights not <u>in thalamo</u>; <u>Hymen</u> and she are at variance. I shall return with much haste.</p> <p>[Exit.]</p> <p>Wel. And much <u>speed</u>, sir, I hope. Certainly I am arrived amongst a nation of new-found fools, on a land <u>where no navigator has yet planted wit</u>. If I had foreseen it, I would have laded my breeches with bells, knives, copper, and glasses, to trade with the women for their virginities; yet, I fear, I should have betrayed myself to a needless charge then. Here's the walking <u>night-cap</u> again.</p> <p>Re-enter Roger.</p> <p>Roger. Sir, my lady's pleasure is to see you; who hath commanded me to acknowledge her sorrow that you must take the pains to come up for so bad entertainment.</p> <p>Wel. I shall obey your lady that sent it, and acknowledge you that brought it to be your <u>art's master</u>.</p> <p>Roger. I am but a <u>bachelor of art</u>, sir; and I have the <u>mending of all under this roof</u>, from my lady on her down-bed to the maid in the <u>pease-straw</u>.</p> <p>Wel. A cobbler, sir?</p> <p>Roger. No, sir; I inculcate divine service within these walls.</p> <p>Wel. But the inhabitants of this house do often employ you on <u>errands</u>, without any scruple of conscience?</p>	<p>= this proverbial sentiment first appeared around 1400.¹ = discover.¹</p> <p>459: <i>in thalamo</i> = Latin for "in the bedroom", or "in the marriage bed"; as an educated man, Roger will sprinkle his dialogue with Latin. <i>Hymen</i> = the god of marriage; Roger is, in his indirect way, explains that Lady is not interested in being courted, or in marriage, at this time.</p> <p>= success, but also punning on <i>haste</i>.</p> <p>= Welford perhaps alludes to the colonies England had <i>planted</i> recently in Virginia, and he goes on to suggest the kinds of trinkets he should have brought with him to sell to the natives in exchange for access to their women.</p> <p>469-470: <i>I should...charge then</i> = ie. "I would have spent all that money for nothing."</p> <p>= Roger is wearing a <i>night-cap</i>, which suggests he is unwell in some way.</p> <p>475-8: ie. as the host, Lady acknowledges her bad manners in making Welford come upstairs to visit her, instead of her greeting him downstairs.</p> <p>= Welford puns on the <i>Master of Arts</i> degree he expects Roger would have attained.</p> <p>= Roger presumably puns on <i>bachelor</i>, referring to his unmarried status.</p> <p>= ie. Roger, as a cleric, is responsible for the care of the souls and morals of those who live in Lady's house.</p> <p>= ie. a bed stuffed with the straw of the pea plant; the original name for <i>pea</i> was <i>pease</i>; that is, <i>pease</i> was singular, and only later dropped the "s" to indicate a single pea;¹ Abigail, as a servant, would of course sleep on a coarser bed than her mistress.</p> <p>487: Welford puns on Roger's use of the word <i>mending</i>.</p> <p>= ie. other than religious errands.</p>
---	--	--

496 **Roger.** Yes, I do take the air many mornings on foot,
 498 three or four miles, for eggs. But why move you that?
 500
 502 **Wel.** To know whether it might become your function
 504 to bid my man to neglect his horse a little, to attend on
 506 me.
 508 **Roger.** Most properly, sir.
 510 **Wel.** I pray you do so, then, and whilst I will attend
 512 your lady. You direct all this house in the true way?
 514
 516 **Roger.** I do, sir.
 518 **Wel.** And this door, I hope, conducts to your lady?
 520
 522 **Roger.** Your understanding is ingenious.
 524
 526 [Exeunt severally.]

ACT I, SCENE II.

A Room in the House of the Elder Loveless.

Enter Young Loveless and Savil, with a writing.

1 **Sav.** By your favour sir, you shall pardon me.
 2
 3 **Young.** I shall beat your favour, sir. Cross me no more:
 4 I say they shall come in.
 5
 6 **Sav.** Sir, you forget me, who I am.
 7
 8 **Young.** Sir, I do not; thou art my brother's steward,
 9 his cast off mill-money, his kitchen arithmetic.
 10
 11
 12 **Sav.** Sir, I hope you will not make so little of me?
 13
 14 **Young.** I make thee not so little as thou art: for
 15 indeed there goes no more to the making of a steward
 16 but a fair *imprimis*, and then a reasonable *item* infused
 17 into him, and the thing is done.
 18
 19 **Sav.** Nay, then, you stir my duty, and I must tell you –
 20
 21 **Young.** What wouldst thou tell me? how hops go?
 22 or hold some rotten discourse of sheep, or when

= ie. ask.

498-500: Welford is considerate: he does not want to offend Roger by asking him to fetch his (Welford's) servant (his *man*), who is walking the horses.

= meanwhile.

= ie. the proper spiritual journey through life.¹

= leads.

= ie. through separate exits.

Scene ii: we may note that while the original editions broke up the play into its individual Acts, scene breaks - as well as scene settings - were added by later editors.

= written document.

3: *beat* = the first quarto has *beat*; the later editions print *bear*, which lose the dark the humour of the line.
your favour, sir = Young mockingly repeats Savil's words; Young will of course normally use *thee* to address his social inferior, while the steward will always use the formal *you* in addressing his superiors.
cross = thwart.

= the earliest editions print *one* here.

9: Young alludes to Savil's job, as steward, to act as the household bookkeeper; Young puns on *cast off*, meaning both (1) "to reckon up an account", and (2) "thrown-away",^{1,3} while *mill-money* refers to coins minted in a press, rather than struck individually with a hammer.¹

13: a biting insult.

15: Young continues his bookkeeping humor: *imprimis* refers to the first item on a list, and an *item* was any entry in an account book¹ (these words are italicized in the original text).

= "force me to do my job", referring to his instructions from Elder regarding Young.

= sell.⁴

22 Lady-day falls? Prithee, fare well, and entertain my
 24 friends; be drunk and burn thy table-books; and my
 26 dear spark of velvet, thou and I –
 28 **Sav.** Good sir, remember.
 30 **Young.** I do remember thee a foolish fellow; one that
 32 did put his trust in almanacs and horse-fairs, and rose
 34 by honey and pot-butter. Shall they come in yet?
 36 **Sav.** Nay, then, I must unfold your brother's pleasure.
 38 These be the lessons, sir, he left behind him.
 40 **Young.** Prithee, expound the first.
 42 **Sav.** [Reads] *I leave, to keep my house, three
 44 hundred pounds a-year, and my brother to dispose
 46 of it –*
 48 **Young.** Mark that, my wicked steward, – and I
 50 dispose of it.
 52 **Sav.** [Reads] *Whilst he bears himself like a
 54 gentleman, and my credit falls not in him. –*
 56 Mark that, my good young sir, mark that.
 58 **Young.** Nay, if it be no more, I shall fulfill it: whilst
 60 my legs will carry me, I'll bear myself gentleman-like,
 62 but when I am drunk, let them bear me that can.
 64 Forward, dear steward.
 66 **Sav.** [Reads] *Next, it is my will, that he be furnished,
 as my brother, with attendance, apparel, and the
 obedience of my people.*
Young. Steward, this is as plain as your old minikin-
 breeches. Your wisdom will relent now, will it not?
 Be mollified or – You understand me, sir. Proceed.
Sav. [Reads] *Next, that my steward keep his place
 and power, and bound my brother's wildness with
 his care.*
Young. I'll hear no more of this Apocrypha;
bind it by itself, steward.

22: **Lady-day** = March 25, a festival day celebrating the
 Virgin Mary.¹
fare well = "live freely";³ Young demands Savil allow
 him to carouse with his friends, and even encourages him
 to join them in their debauchery.
 = notebooks or memorandum books.^{1,4}
 = a reference to the fine livery worn by servants.
 = ie. rose in status.
 = salted butter.¹ = ie. Young's friends and comrades.
 = ie. "reveal to you".
 33: Savil indicates the written instructions left him by Elder.
 = maintain.
 38-39: **dispose of it** = ie. spend as he wishes.
 44-45: Savil finishes his sentence; **Whilst** = so long as.
 = reputation, name.² = ie. because of.
 = Savil mockingly repeats Young's own words.
 = who.
 = "go on".
 53-55: Elder intends that Young be dressed well and be
 attended by his own servants as befits Young's status
 as Elder's brother.
 57-58: **minikin-breeches** = another allusion to Savil's
 unfashionable tight-fitting hose;³ **minikin** was a plain-
 weave worsted wool.¹
 = a mock title.
 = ie. "or else", an implied threat.
 = a reference to the seven books of the Bible that have been
 viewed historically as of uncertain authenticity;³⁰ they were
 included in English Bibles until the early 19th century.³
 Young clearly considers his brother's instructions as not to
 be followed.
 = the **Apocrypha** had been published separately in the
 16th century.³

68 **Sav.** This is your brother's will; and, as I take it, he
70 makes no mention of such company as you would draw
72 unto you, – captains of gally-foists, such as in a clear
74 day have seen Calais; fellows that have no more of God
76 than their oaths come to; they wear swords to reach fire
at a play, and get there the oiled end of a pipe for their
guerdon; then the remnant of your regiment are
wealthy tobacco-merchants, that set up with one ounce,
and break for three; together with a forlorn hope of

78 poets; and all these look like Carthusians, things
80 without linen. Are these fit company for my master's
brother?

82 **Young.** I will either convert thee, oh, thou pagan steward!
84 Or presently confound thee and thy reckonings. –
Who's there? Call in the gentlemen!

86 **Sav.** Good sir!

88 **Young.** Nay, you shall know both who I am, and
90 where I am.

92 **Sav.** Are you my master's brother?

94 **Young.** Are you the sage master-steward, with a face
96 like an old ephemerides?

98 *Enter Young's Comrades: Captain, Traveller,
Poet and Tobacco-Man.*

98 **Sav.** Then God help all, I say!

100 **Young.** Ay, and 'tis well said, my old peer of France.

68f: in this speech, Savil sprinkles a series of military terms (*company, captain, regiment*) to disparage the men Young keeps as companions: *company* is thus used in both its regular sense and to mean "a body of soldiers".

= contemptuous term for pleasure boats or state barges, particularly that of London's mayor;^{1,4} Savil is suggesting that Young's friends - and particularly the Captain - have never seen a day of real danger in their lives.

71-72: *fellows...come to* = the only time God is in their lives is when they swear by his name.

72-73: *they wear...pipe* = a fire of juniper was kept burning in the theaters; a man might stick the point of his sword into the fire in order to gain a light for his pipe.³

= reward.

= ie. set up shop.¹

76: *break* = go bankrupt.¹

forlorn hope = a group of desperate men, and also a group of soldiers selected to lead an attack;¹ *hope* seems to be used as a word of assemblage, like a *flock* of birds.

= a religious order founded by St. Bruno in the 11th century, whose monks led lives of extreme asceticism, including wearing the poorest of clothing; Savil compares Young's companions to Carthusians in the poverty reflected in their clothing.^{1,8}

81: *confound* = ruin or corrupt.²

reckonings = calculations as keeper of the house accounts; but *reckoning* also refers to one's being called by God to account for his or her life,¹ which Young uses punningly with his intent to convert the *pagan* Savil.

= ie. yellow and wrinkled like the pages of the old almanac, especially one containing astrological and astronomical predictions; *ephemerides* is properly the plural word, and *ephemeris* the singular.^{1,3}

Entering Characters: Young's friends, a soldier, a world-traveller, a poet and a smoking expert, enter the stage. The *Tobacco-man* would have given lessons in smoking to the others.³ We may note here the Tobacco-man speaks no lines in the play.

= an allusion to Charlemagne's "Twelve Peers", the name given to the emperor's cadre of elite knights (something akin to the "Knights of the Round Table").¹⁵

102 – Welcome, gentlemen, welcome, gentlemen;
mine own dear lads, you're richly welcome. Know
this old Harry-groat.

104 **Capt.** Sir, I will take your love –

106 **Sav.** [*Aside*] Sir, you will take my purse.

108 **Capt.** And study to continue it.

110 **Sav.** I do believe you.

112 **Trav.** Your honorable friend and master's brother
114 Hath given you to us for a worthy fellow,
And so we hug you sir.

116 **Sav.** [*Aside*]
118 H'as given himself into the hands of varlets
120 But to be carved out. – Sir, are these the pieces?

122 **Young.** They are the morals of the age, the virtues,
Men made of gold.

124 **Sav.** [*Aside*] Of your gold, you mean, sir.

126 **Young.** This is a man of war, and cries "Go on,"
And wears his colours –

128 **Sav.** [*Aside*] In's nose.

130 **Young.** In the fragrant field.

132 This is a traveller, sir, knows men and manners,
And has plowed up the sea so far, till both
134 The poles have knocked; has seen the sun take coach,

= a coin from the reign of Henry VIII, portraying the king with long hair and a long face; Young is introducing Savil to his friends with this unflattering comparison.³

105: the Captain is a jolly soul, happy to make friends with everyone he meets.

= endeavor to maintain.

113-5: the Traveller addresses Savil.

118-9: *H'as...carved out* = Savil censoriously suggests that Young's friends are likely to take advantage of his generosity.

But = the original editions print *Not* here, corrected by all the editors.

H'as = "he has".

to be carved out = a reference to the practice of *carving out* a portion of the master's food for distribution among the servants.³

are these the pieces = having just been introduced by the name of a cheap coin (*Harry Groat*), Savil returns the favour by ironically referring to Young's friends as valuable coins (*pieces*).³

124: Savil worries that Young will spend all of his 300 pounds supporting and entertaining his friends.

126-7: Young introduces the Captain, a title which suggests he led a regiment of troops in war.

Go on = a cry of encouragement, as if to battle.
= battle flags or standards.²

129: Savil completes Young's sentence; the notion is that the Captain's nose is red (perhaps from too much drinking), like the face and nose of Shakespeare's character Bardolph, the companion of Prince Harry, whose red countenance was continuously mocked in *Henry IV, Parts I and II*.³

131: Bond notes that Young is describing the Captain in "mock-heroic talk" which he has "caught" from the Captain, who himself speaks in the manner of Shakespeare's Pistol, another of Prince Harry's companions.

134: *poles have knocked* = ie. "reached countries where the wildest improbabilities are fact".³

the sun takes coach = in Greek mythology, the sun

136 And can distinguish the colour of his horses,
And their kinds; and had a Flanders-mare leaped there.

138 *Sav.* 'Tis much.

140 *Trav.* I have seen more, sir.

142 *Sav.* 'Tis even enough, o' conscience. Sit down, and rest
you: you are at the end of the world already. – Would

144 you had as good a living, sir, as this fellow could lie
you out of! h'as a notable gift in't!

146 *Young.* This ministers the smoke, and this the Muses.

148 *Sav.* And you the cloths, and meat, and money. You

150 have a goodly generation of 'em; pray, let them

152 multiply; your brother's house is big enough, and to
say truth, h'as too much land, – hang it, dirt!

154 *Young.* Why, now thou art a loving stinkard. Fire off

thy annotations and thy rent-books; thou hast a weak

156 brain, Savil, and with the next long bill thou wilt run
mad. – Gentlemen, you are once more welcome to three
158 hundred pounds a-year; we will be freely merry, shall
we not?

160 *Capt.* Merry as mirth and wine, my lovely Loveless.

162 *Poet.* A serious look shall be a jury to excommunicate
164 any man from our company.

166 *Trav.* We will have nobody talk wisely neither.

168 *Young.* What think you, gentlemen, by all this revenue
in drink?

170

was a golden chariot driven across the sky each day by
Apollo.

= frequently alluded-to powerful horses bred by the
Flemish; Young is exaggerating the experiences of
the Traveller.

143: *at the end of the world already* = perhaps a reference to
Britain's being the most distant known land of the ancient
world; Savil is humorously suggesting the Traveller should
rest because he can travel no further.

143-5: *Would you...gift in't* = an aside directed at
Young, but not so he can hear it: "I wish you had enough
income to match the amount of money the Traveller's lies
will persuade you to spend on him."

= ie. in Traveller's ability to tell lies.

146: with the first *this*, meaning "this person here", Young
gestures towards the Tobacco-man; with the second *this*,
Young indicates the Poet.

Muses = the nine goddesses who cultivated the arts.

149: Savil refers again to the provisions Young will *carve
out* to his friends.

= (1) a group of individuals of the same age, and (2)
reproduction; it is this latter meaning which Savil puns
with *multiply* in the next line.

= a likely aside: "damn it, I meant to say *dirt*," a contemp-
tuous term for "land"¹

= ie. one would *fire off* one's hunting gun before setting it
aside.³

155: with *annotations* and *rent-books*, Young again alludes
to Savil's role as bookkeeper; an *annotation* is an inventory
of the household's goods that have been seized by the
authorities;¹ a *rent-book* was a notebook listing one's
properties, and the rent due from them.¹

= list of great expenses (which Young will incur).¹

163-4: ie. "anyone who is not merry convicts himself, and
will be banned from our company."

168-9: *by all...drink* = "of all this money I can spend on
alcohol?"

172 **Capt.** I am all for drink.

174 **Trav.** I am dry till it be so.

176 **Poet.** He that will not cry “amen” to this, let him live sober, seem wise, and die o’th’ corum.

178 **Young.** It shall be so, we’ll have it all in drink:
 180 Let meat and lodging go; they are transitory,
 182 And show men merely mortal.
 Then we’ll have wenches, every one his wench,
 And every week a fresh one, – we’ll keep
No powdered flesh. All these we have by warrant,

184 Under the title of “things necessary”;

186 here upon this place I ground it, “the obedience of my people, and all necessaries.” Your opinions gentlemen?

188 **Capt.** ’Tis plain and evident that he meant wenches.

190 **Sav.** Good sir, let me expound it.

192 **Capt.** Here be as sound men as yourself, sir.

194 **Poet.** This do I hold to be the interpretation of it: in this word “necessary” is concluded all that be helps to man;
 196 woman was made the first, and therefore here the chiefest.

198 **Young.** Believe me, ’tis a learned one; and by these
 200 words, “the obedience of my people”, you, steward,
 202 being one, are bound to fetch us wenches.

204 **Capt.** He is, he is.

206 **Young.** Steward, attend us for instructions.

208 **Sav.** But will you keep no house, sir?

210 **Young.** Nothing but drink; three hundred pounds in drink.

212 **Sav.** O miserable house, and miserable I
 That live to see it! Good sir, keep some meat.

214 **Young.** Get us good whores, and for your part, I’ll
 board you
 In an alehouse! you shall have cheese and onions.

175-6: **let him...corum** = briefly, "let him live and die like a judge."³

corum = ie. a legal quorum.³

179: so long as they have money to spend on drink, they shall not worry about room and board.

183: **powdered flesh** = meat that was salted to keep it from going bad; Young means they will keep no individual woman for any long period of time, but will rather rotate them regularly, ie. fresh wenches will be regularly required for these gentlemen!

warrant = authorization.²

183: Young is referring to a clause in Elder's instructions requiring Young to be provided with all **things necessary** to maintain him properly - which Young takes to include an endless supply of alcohol and prostitutes; we may note that Savil did not read aloud any clause which included these words.

= ie. "in this category I include it".

= ie. Elder.

= explain the meaning of the clause.¹

192: ie. "we are just as capable of interpreting the clause as you are."

= included.¹

= ie. in Elder's instructions.

= ie. "stand by".

= ie. not take on the responsibility of managing the house.

= ie. "please save some money to spend on food."

214-5: it is unclear whether Young considers his offer a reward or a threat.

216	Sav. [<i>Aside</i>]	218: Bond thinks this line suggests that Savil has been able to take advantage of his position to acquire a little extra income or benefits on the side.
218	What shall become of me, no chimney smoking?	= as the younger brother wasting his money, Young deserves comparison to the prodigal son of Christ's parable.
220	Well, <u>prodigal</u> , your brother will come home.	
	[<i>Exit.</i>]	
222	Young. Come lads, I'll warrant you for wenches.	
224	Three hundred pounds in drink.	
226	[<i>Exeunt omnes.</i>]	226: all exit
	END OF ACT I.	

ACT II.

SCENE I.

A Bed-Chamber in Lady's House.

Enter Lady, Welford, Sir Roger.

Entering Characters: Lady is showing Welford his room for the night.

1 **Lady.** Sir, now you see your bad lodging, I must bid
2 you good night.

= Lady is being modest.

4 **Wel.** Lady, if there be any want, 'tis in want of you.

= ie. anything missing.

6 **Lady.** A little sleep will ease that complement.
Once more, good night.

= "bring relief regarding that missing piece."¹ There may also be a pun here on **compliment** (referring to flattering language), though it is uncertain whether this use of **compliment** was current in the early 17th century.¹

8 **Wel.** Once more, dear lady, and then all sweet nights.

= the sense seems to be, "one more thing".

10 **Lady.** Dear sir, be short and sweet, then.

12 **Wel.** Shall the morrow
14 Prove better to me? shall I hope my suit
Happier by this night's rest?

= ie. courtship.

16 **Lady.** Is your suit so sickly, that rest will help it?
18 Pray ye, let it rest, then, till I call for it.
Sir, as a stranger, you have had all my welcome;
20 But had I known your errand ere you came,
Your passage had been straiter. Sir, good night.

= a phrase used in the card game of whist,³ punning on **suit**.

= "before you arrived".

= narrower, more difficult to negotiate:¹ the suggestion is that had Lady known Welford was a suitor, she would not have welcomed him in her home.

22 **Wel.** So fair and cruèl! Dear unkind, good night. –

23: a seeming unique use of **unkind** as a vocative term.

24 [Exit Lady.]

25: Roger also starts to leave, but is called back by Welford.

26 Nay, sir, you shall stay with me; I'll press your zeal
28 So far.

= **zeal** is usually used to suggest religious enthusiasm.

30 **Roger.** O, Lord, sir!

32 **Wel.** Do you love tobacco?

34 **Roger.** Surely I love it, but it loves not me;

= ie. "disagrees with me"; Roger will find himself tearing up from the smoke.

Yet with your reverence, I will be bold.

35: "but in your company, I will try it."

36 **Wel.** Pray, light it, sir. How do you like it?

37: the pair are smoking pipes.

38 [They smoke.]

Smoking: the use of tobacco for smoking in the New World was observed by the earliest explorers, including Christopher Columbus. Tobacco was first brought to Europe in 1558 by the Spanish physician Francisco Fernandes. The habit of smoking itself, however, was introduced to Europe by Virginia settlers Ralph Lane (the first governor of Virginia) and Sir Francis Drake, who brought back the first

40 **Rog.** I promise you, it is notable stinging gear indeed.
 42 It is wet, sir; Lord, how it brings down rheum!

44 **Wel.** Handle it again, sir; you have a warm text of it.

46 **Roger.** Thanks ever premised for it. I promise you,
 It is very powerful, and, by a trope, spiritual;
 48 For certainly it moves in sundry places.

50 **Wel.** Ay, it does so, sir, and me, especially,
 52 To ask, sir, why you wear a night-cap?

54 **Roger.** Assuredly I will speak the truth unto you.
 You shall understand, sir, that my head is broken;
 And by whom? even by that visible beast,

56 The butler.

58 **Wel.** The butler? Certainly
 He had all his drink about him when he did it.
 60 Strike one of your grave cassock! the offence, sir?

62 **Roger.** Reproving him at tray-trip, sir, for swearing.

You have the total, surely.

64 **Wel.** You tolled him when his rage was set a-tilt,

66 And so he cracked your canons. I hope he has
 Not hurt your gentle reading. But shall we see
 68 These gentlewomen to-night?

implements for smoking in 1586. Sir Walter Raleigh, in turn, was the man responsible for popularizing pipe-smoking, a fashion which quickly took hold in Elizabethan court society.¹⁰ James I denounced the habit, and even judged a debate on the subject of smoking held at Oxford in 1605.⁶

= business.
 = tears.

44: **Handle it** = ie. "work the tobacco between your fingers (to dry it)".³

text = hand, but also referring to the Scriptures;¹ one of Welford's many jokes incorporating religious terms, as he speaks to the cleric.

46: Roger gives thanks as an introduction; as Roger is an educated man, he would naturally use the word **premise**, a term from logic, and, true to his character, would also enjoy the wordplay of **premised** and **promise**.

We may note that only the first edition has **premised** here; all subsequent editions print **promised**.

= metaphor, figure of speech.

48: **moves** = stirs passions,¹ in addition to its usual meaning.
sundry = various.¹

= "and it **moves** me", ie. "spurs me".

= wounded.

= obvious or eminent beast,¹ or one who appears to everyone as a beast.⁴ Dyce suggests Roger has "the mark of the beast" from Revelations in mind.

= the **butler** was the servant usually responsible for the wine cellar, as well as the dispensing of drink.¹

59: "he was drunk when he did it."

= a loose coat or frock, as worn by clerics and others.¹

62: **at** =ie. while playing.

tray-trip = a game of dice, perhaps something like backgammon,³ likely depending on the throw of three (ie. **trey**).¹

63: "that's the whole story".

65: "you pulled on (**tolled**), ie. provoked, him when his rage was already at a tipping point (**a-tilt**) due to his drinking."³

= **canons** has various religious meanings, including Church law generally, and the accepted, inspired books of the Bible; there may also be a reference to artillery, as in **cannons**.

= ie. of the Scriptures, but also punning on the phrase **gentle reader**, used by writers when addressing their audience.¹

70	Roger. Have patience, sir, Until our fellow <u>Nicholas</u> be deceased,	= ie. Old Nick, the devil, ¹ meaning the butler.
72	That is, asleep: for so the word is taken: "To sleep, to die; to die, to sleep;" a very <u>figure</u> , sir.	73: Roger sort-of quotes from Shakespeare's <i>Hamlet</i> : " <i>to die, to sleep; to sleep: perchance to dream.</i> " figure = metaphor or image; ¹ see the next line for Welford's punning use of figure .
74	Wel. Cannot you <u>cast another</u> for the gentlewomen?	= ie. like a fishing net, meaning "try again"; but also an astrological pun: to cast a figure meant to diagram the arrangement of the planets at a given time. ¹
76	Roger. Not till the man be in <u>his bed, his grave</u> :	= Roger again alludes to <i>Hamlet</i> : " <i>twenty thousand men... go to their graves like beds</i> ".
78	His grave, his bed: the very same again, sir. Our <u>comic poet</u> gives the reason sweetly;	= the ancient Roman comic playwright Terence, not Shakespeare. ³
80	<u>Plenus rimarum est</u> ; he is full of <u>loopholes</u> , and will <u>discover</u> to our patroness.	80: Plenus rimarum est = "I am full of holes or chinks", from Terence's play <i>Eunuch</i> . loopholes = usually narrow, vertical openings in a wall from which to shoot arrows, or admit light; the sense is that the butler, who cannot keep quiet, will reveal (discover) to Lady the facts of the incident with Roger, so the pair should not approach Lady until the butler has gone to bed.
82		
84	Wel. Your comment, sir, has made me understand you. <i>Enter Martha (the Lady's sister) and Abigail to them with a posset.</i>	Entering Characters: Lady's sister Martha is yet another member of the household. = a sweet drink of hot milk curdled with alcohol. ³
86		
88	Roger. Sir, <u>be addressed</u> ; <u>the Graces</u> do salute you With the full <u>bowl of plenty</u> . – Is <u>our old enemy</u> entombed?	88: be addressed = "be ready". ⁹ the Graces = the three beautiful daughters of Jupiter and Eurynome, referring to Martha and Abigail. = Roger playfully uses a variation of the phrase "horn of plenty", referring to a cornucopia. ¹ = ie. the butler; note that with entombed , Roger continues to connect sleep and death. = ie. fast asleep.
90		
92	Abig. He's <u>fast</u> .	
94	Roger. And does he snore out supinely with the poet?	94: Roger is thinking about a phrase from the <i>Sermonum</i> of the Roman poet Horace, " <i>stertitque supinus</i> ", meaning "snores on his back". ³
96	Mar. No, he out-snores the poet.	
98	Wel. Gentlewoman, this courtesy Shall <u>bind</u> a stranger to you, ever your servant.	= tie, ie. oblige, place in debt.
100	Mar. Sir, my sister's <u>strictness</u> makes not us forget You are a stranger and a gentleman.	101-2: just because Lady has such a severe manner (strictness) does not mean her sister Martha doesn't know the proper way to treat a house-guest.
102		
104	Abig. In <u>sooth</u> , sir, were I changed into my lady, A gentleman <u>so well endowed with parts</u> Should not be lost.	= truth. = endowed with such good qualities.
106		106: ie. "would not be forgotten or left alone;" Abigail is flirting again with Welford.
108	Wel. I thank you, gentlewoman,	

I do not think they would make thee a day older.

could take on all of Welford's griefs, and they could not age her any further than she already is.

Note how Martha addresses Abigail appropriately as *thee*, but Welford with *you*, as befits a gentleman.

146 **Abig.** Sir, will you put in deeper? 'tis the sweeter.

147: Abigail alludes to a proverbial sentiment; in Ben Jonson's *Every Man in His Humour*, for example, we find "the deeper, the sweeter"; *deep* and *sweet* were commonly paired in the literature of the era, and could be used to refer to a number of concepts, including love and sleep, or, as here, the pleasure associated with eating.

put in deeper = eat more vigorously or to the bottom of the bowl.

148 **Mar.** Well said, Old-sayings.

= a mock epithet for Abigail, referring to her pithy adage.

150 **Wel.** [Aside] She looks like one indeed. –
152 Gentlewoman, you keep your word: your sweet self
Has made the bottom sweeter.

151: the dash in this line is used to indicate the end of the character's aside.

154 **Abig.** Sir, I begin a frolic: dare you change, sir?

155: Abigail is desirous to exchange (*change*) witty conversation with Welford.

156 **Wel.** Myself for you, so please you. –
158 [Aside]
That smile has turned my stomach. This is right,
160 The old emblem of the moyle cropping of thistles.
Lord, what a hunting head she carries! sure,

160: Abigail reminds Welford of a grazing mule (*moyle*).³

161: an unclear metaphor: perhaps Welford is comparing Abigail's head to that of a horse used for hunting.

= a strap looped around the head of a horse to keep it from throwing its head back.^{1,3}

162 She has been ridden with a martingale.
Now, Love, deliver me!

164 **Roger.** [Aside]
166 Do I dream, or do I wake? surely I know not.

166f: the exact intent of Roger's speech may appear unclear at this point; but it will not harm the reader to know that Roger has had an understanding with Abigail, and now is stunned to find her obviously flirting with Welford.

168 Am I rubbed off? is this the way of all
My morning prayers? Oh, Roger, thou art but grass,
And woman as a flower! Did I for this
170 Consume my quarters in meditation[s], vows,

= ie. erased from the picture.

170: Roger uses a religious metaphor: he has used up all his time (*quarters* = the 3-hour intervals between the times appointed by church canon for praying)¹ on *meditations* and *vows*, both of which can be seen as applying to periods of both prayer and thinking about and making promises to Abigail.

172 And wooed her in Heroical Epistles?
Did I expound The Owl?

171-2: Roger suggests he was wooing Abigail by reading to her the poetry of the English poet Michael Drayton, who, having been born in 1563, was still alive at the time this play was written and performed.³ His *England's Heroical Epistles* (1597), modeled on Ovid's *Heroides*, contained a series of composed poems pretending to be love letters of famous English couples written to each other.

The Owl (1604), on the other hand, was more in the line of satire, but has been considered one of Drayton's less successful works.¹¹

And undertook, with labour and expense,

174	The re-collection of those thousand <u>pieces</u> ,	174-6: Roger refers to the extensive output of the prolific
	Consumed in cellars and tobacco-shops,	English poet <i>Nicholas Breton</i> , who was born around
176	Of that our honoured Englishman, <u>Nick Breton</u> ?	1545, and was still alive into the 1620's; ¹² <i>pieces</i> refers
		to Breton's poems.
	Have I done thus, and am done thus to?	
178	I will end with the wise man, and say,	179: proverbial, included in John Heywood's famous
	"He that holds a woman has an eel by the tail."	<i>Proverbs of John Heywood</i> of 1546.
180		
	Mar. Sir, 'tis so late, and our entertainment (meaning	= ie. by this time, by now.
182	our posset) <u>by this</u> is grown so cold, that 'twere an	
184	unmannerly part longer to hold you from your rest. Let	
	what the house has be at your command, sir.	
186	Wel. Sweet rest be with you, lady: – and <u>to you</u>	= ie. to Abigail.
	What you desire too.	
188		
	Abig. It should be some such good thing like yourself,	189: Abigail has no shame!
	then.	
190		
	[<i>Exeunt Martha and Abigail.</i>]	
192		
	Wel. Heaven keep me from that curse, and all my <u>issue</u> !	= children or descendants.
194	Good night, <u>Antiquity</u> .	= a parody of <i>Iniquity</i> , an alternative name for <i>Vice</i> , a
		buffoonish character from the old morality plays, ¹ and
		frequently alluded to in Elizabethan drama; <i>Antiquity</i> is
		also of course another reference to Abigail's age.
196	Roger. [<i>Aside</i>] <i>Solamen miseris socios habuisse doloris:</i>	196: literally "misery is easier when one is not the only one",
	But I alone –	or more pithily "misery loves company". ¹³
198		
	Wel. Learned sir, will you bid my man come to me?	200: "and, hoping to spend more profitable time with you in
200	and, requesting a greater measure of your learning,	the future"; Welford expresses a polite sentiment upon
	good-night, good Master Roger.	separating from Roger for the night.
202		
	Roger. Good sir, peace be with you!	
204		
	Wel. Adieu, dear <u>Domine</u> .	= Lord; a polite form of address towards a clergyman. ¹
206		
	[<i>Exit Roger.</i>]	
208		
	Half a dozen such	209f: Welford now tells us what he really thinks of Roger!
210	In a kingdom would make a man forswear confession;	
	For who, that had but half his wits about him,	= judgment.
212	Would commit the <u>counsel</u> of a serious sin	= a worsted yarn, used for making the vestments of clergy. ¹
	To such a <u>crewel</u> night-cap? –	
214		
	<i>Enter Welford's Servant, drunk.</i>	
216		
	Why, how now?	= grotesque or bizarre entertainment. ²
218	Shall we have an <u>antic</u> ? Whose head do you carry	= throw. ³
	Upon your shoulders that you <u>jowl</u> it so	
220	Against the post? is't for your ease, or have	= ie. where the liquor would be kept.
	You seen the <u>cellar</u> ? where are my slippers, sir?	
222		
	Serv. Here, sir.	
224		
	Wel. Where, sir? have you got the <u>pot-verdugo</u> ?	= this odd and unique expression has puzzled all the

226 Have you seen the horses, sir?

228 *Serv.* Yes, sir.

230 *Wel.* Have they any meat?

232 *Serv.* Faith, sir, they have a kind of wholesome rushes; hay I cannot call it.

234 *Wel.* And no provender?

236 *Serv.* Sir, so I take it.

238 *Wel.* You are merry, sir; and why so?

240

Serv. Faith, sir, here are no oats to be got, unless you'll have 'em in porridge; the people are so mainly given to spoon-meat. Yonder's a cast of coach-mares of the gentlewoman's, the strangest cattle!

242

244

246 *Wel.* Why?

248 *Serv.* Why, they are transparent, sir; you may see through them: and such a house!

250

252 *Wel.* Come, sir, the truth of your discovery.

Serv. Sir, they are in tribes, like Jews: the kitchen and

254 the dairy make one tribe, and have their faction and their fornication within themselves; the buttery and the

256 laundry are another, and there's no love lost; the chambers are entire, and what's done there is somewhat

258 higher than my knowledge; but this I am sure, between

commentators; the OED suggests "dizziness from consuming alcohol"; Dyce quotes an earlier editor who suggests "a stunning blow from drink", based on the definition of *verdugo* described below.

pot = a drinking vessel.

verdugo = all the old editors point out that *verdugo* is a Spanish word, meaning "executioner", or "severe stroke",⁴ and not at all related to its English near-homonym *vertigo*; there is also an entry for *verdugo* in John Florio's 1598 Italian-English dictionary, which he defines as a "rapier, a tucke or little sword".

seen (line 226) = ie. seen to.

= ie. "been fed?" (*meat* = fodder).¹

= an oxymoron; the servant comments on the lack of quality fodder in the house: *rushes* would provide a poor substitute for the cut grass that makes up *hay*.

= ie. proper dry food, such as oats or hay, for a horse.¹

237: "I believe that is correct."

239: *merry* = droll, amusing.

and why so? = "and why do you believe there is no provender available?" Welford actually finds his drunken servant entertaining, and is curious to hear him explain himself; this is an endearing characteristic of Welford's.

243: *spoon-meat* = ie. liquid food, as consumed by invalids.¹

Yonder's = "and over there is".

cast = pair.

= ie. so thin as to be see-through, due to their being so ill-fed.

253-360: this speech could easily have been converted into verse - it is clearly written in iambs - but I follow both Bond and Dyce in leaving it as printed, in prose.

tribes = ie. metaphor for "factions"; the servant goes on in this speech to describe his observations of the cliques formed by Lady's various servants.

255: *fornication within themselves* = ie. "they only sleep around with each other"; *fornication* is a surprisingly ancient word, having first appeared around 1400 A.D. in a Northumbrian poem known as *Cursor Mundi*.

buttery = store room or liquor room.

= ie. the members of the two cliques don't like each other.¹

= ie. those who work as servants in the rooms form a full faction by themselves.¹

258-260: *between...fasting* = as the factions find sexual

260 these copulations, a stranger is kept virtuous, that is,
fasting. But of all this, the drink, sir –

262 **Wel.** What of that, sir?

264 **Serv.** Faith, sir, I will handle it as the time and your
patience will give me leave. This drink, or this cooling
266 julap, of which three spoonfuls kills the calenture, a

pint breeds the cold palsy –

268 **Wel.** Sir, you belie the house.

270 **Serv.** I would I did, sir! But, as I am a true man, if
272 'twere but one degree colder, nothing but an ass's hoof
would hold it.

274 **Wel.** I am glad on't, sir; for if it had proved stronger,
276 You had been tongue-tied of these commendations.
278 Light me the candle, sir: I'll hear no more.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT II, SCENE II.

A Room in the House of Elder Loveless.

*Enter Young Loveless, Captain, Traveller, Poet,
Tobacco-man, with Wenches and two Fiddlers.*

1 **Young.** Come, my brave man of war, trace out thy darling.
2 And you, my learned council, set and turn boys;

Kiss till the cow come home; kiss close, kiss close, knaves;

4 My modern Poet, thou shalt kiss in couplets. –

6 *Enter Servant, with wine.*

8 Strike up, you merry varlets, and leave your peeping;

comfort only amongst themselves, Welford's servant can find no bedmate, and so is "forced" to remain unstained by sin; **copulation** is another ancient word that dates back to 1400 A.D., but it originally meant simply "linking", and slightly later in the 15th century came to mean, well, "fornication".¹

= permission.

266: **julap** = a sweet drink.³

three spoonfuls kills = note the not uncommon lack of concern with subject-verb agreement.

calenture = a type of fever.

= causes.¹

= slander.

271: **I would I did** = "I wish I was slandering Lady's household", ie. if he was lying, the facts would be otherwise.

true = honest.⁴

271-3: in a round-about way, the servant swears he is telling the truth; the learned young man alludes to a legend included by the 2nd century Roman historian Justin in his *History*, in which he wrote that the waters of Mt. Nonacris in Arcadia were "of a coldness mortal to the drinker (hence the servant's reference to the **cold palsy** in line 267), and able to penetrate everything except a horse's hoof" (Bond, p. 388).

276: "you would have been too drunk to express these compliments to the house."

= "dance with your girl."¹

= "have a seat". = turn into, ie. act like.

3: **till the cow come home** = this still-proverbial expression (albeit with a single cow) dates back at least to 1593, when it appeared in an instructional book for conversational French!

close = perhaps the sense is "tightly".¹

= ordinary, ie. trite.⁴ = perhaps punning, Young may be suggesting the Poet take two women for himself.

= ie. spying on the amorous activities; Young is addressing

10	This is no pay for fiddlers.	the musicians.
	Capt. Oh, my dear boy, <u>thy Hercules</u> , thy Captain,	= meaning himself; note the Captain addresses Young with the informal and intimate <i>thee</i> .
12	Makes thee his <u>Hylas</u> , his delight, his solace!	= after killing Hylas' father, the king of Dryopes, Hercules took Hylas with him when he, Hercules, left with the Argonauts to seek the Golden Fleece; the youthful and attractive Hylas soon became Hercules' favourite. When the ship stopped in Mysia, Hylas went to fetch some water at a spring, where he became enchanted by the water nymphs, and disappeared, never to be heard from again.
14	Love thy brave man of war, and let thy <u>bounty</u> <u>Clap him in shamois</u> . Let there be deducted	= generosity. = dress him in clothing of soft, high quality leather; ¹ the Captain is hoping to gain more than just drink from Young.
16	Out of our <u>main potatiön</u> , five <u>marks</u> ,	= ie. drinking money. = a mark was a unit of money worth 2/3 pound, though there was no mark coin.
18	In <u>hatchments</u> to adorn this thigh, <u>Cramped with this rest of peace</u> , and I will fight Thy battles.	= silver or gold ornamentation added to the hilt of a sword, which was worn of course along the thigh. ³ = without having a war to fight, the Captain's legs lack their proper adornment. ³
20	Young. Thou shalt have't, boy, and <u>fly in feather</u> . –	= "dress smartly", with an allusion to the then-fashionable wearing of feathers. ^{3,9}
22	Lead on a march, you <u>michers</u> .	= skulkers or loiterers, ie. knaves, meaning the fiddlers. ⁴
24	<i>Enter Savil.</i>	
26	Sav. Oh, my head, oh, my heart! what a noise and change is here! Would I had been <u>cold i' the mouth</u> before this day, And ne'er have lived to see this dissolution!	= ie. dead.
28	He that lives within a mile of this place, <u>Had</u> as good sleep in the perpetual	= ie. will have.
30	Noise of an iron mill. There's a <u>dead sea</u>	= ie. a large lake's worth; the OED's earliest recorded English reference to the Dead Sea is from 1325. ¹
32	Of drink i' the cellar, in which goodly <u>vessels</u> Lie wrecked; and in the middle of this deluge Appear the tops of <u>flagons</u> and <u>black-jacks</u>	31-33: having begun an extended nautical metaphor with dead sea , Savil compares the disarray caused by Young's orgy to that left behind by a storm: vessels refers to both drinking vessels and boats; a flagon is a drinking cup with a handle and spout, a blackjack a leather beer jug. ¹
34	Like churches drowned i' the marshes.	
36	Young. What, art thou come? my sweet Sir <u>Amias</u> ,	= likely meaning Aeneas , a hero of the Trojans; Young is addressing to Savil.
38	Welcome to Troy! Come, thou shalt kiss <u>my Helen</u> , And court her in a dance.	= Young seems to compare himself to Paris, the Trojan who eloped with the beautiful Helen , wife of Menelaus, precipitating the Trojan War.
40	Sav. Good sir, <u>consider</u> .	= ie. "please reflect on your behavior".
42	Young. Shall we consider, gentlemen? how say you?	
44	Capt. Consider! that were a <u>simple toy</u> , i' faith: Consider! whose moral's that?	= weak or frivolous joke or comment. ¹

46	The man that cries "consider" is our foe: Let my <u>steel</u> know him.	= ie. sword.
48	<i>Young.</i> Stay thy <u>dead-doing</u> hand; he must not die yet: Prithee be calm, my <u>Hector</u> .	= hold. = death-dealing. = yet another hero of Troy, and Paris' brother.
52	<i>Capt.</i> Peasant slave! <u>Thou groom</u> composed of <u>grudgings</u> , live, and thank	52: Captain addresses Savil; note that the Captain, probably now drunk, addresses Savil contemptuously as <i>thee</i> in this speech. 53: <i>thou groom</i> = ie. "you low-down servant"; probably insulting to a man who holds the enviable position of steward. <i>grudgings</i> = complaints. ¹
54	<u>This gentleman</u> ; thou <u>hadst</u> seen <u>Pluto</u> else: The next "consider" kills thee.	54: <i>This gentleman</i> = ie. Young, for saving his life. <i>hadst</i> = would have. <i>Pluto</i> = god of the underworld, ie. hell.
56	<i>Trav.</i> Let him drink down his word again, in a gallon Of <u>sack</u> .	55: "the next time I hear you say <i>consider</i> (ie. the next time Savil admonishes them), you will die." = a white wine. ²
60	<i>Poet.</i> 'Tis but a <u>snuff</u> : make it two gallons, And let him do it kneeling in repentance.	= sniff or taste, ³ or the leftover amount of drink remaining at the bottom of a vessel. ¹
62	<i>Sav.</i> Nay, rather kill me; <u>there's but a layman lost</u> .	= proverbial: a person was spiritually lost if he or she did not belong to the church; ³ Savil refers to himself as the lost one, as he won't be affiliated with the partiers. = "do your duty, ie. "please kill me".
64	Good Captain, <u>do your office</u> .	
66	<i>Young.</i> Thou shalt drink, steward; drink and dance, my steward. – Strike him a <u>hornpipe</u> , <u>squeakers</u> ! – Take thy <u>stiver</u> ,	67: <i>hornpipe</i> = a lively dance tune. ¹ <i>squeakers</i> = the earliest citation for the word <i>squeaker</i> in the OED is 1650, used to refer to one who "plays on a squeaking instrument". ¹ Our authors' use here predates 1650, and suggests a contemptuous term for the musicians. <i>stiver</i> = appears to derive from <i>stive</i> , which Nathan Bailey's 1731 <i>An Universal Etymological Dictionary</i> defines as another term for "stews", or an area occupied by prostitutes, hence a prostitute. We may note that the original editions all print <i>striver</i> , which all the editors emend to <i>stiver</i> .
68	And <u>pace her</u> till she <u>stew</u> .	68: a line dense with multiple meanings: one can <i>pace a dance</i> , but the use of <i>her</i> as a direct object also suggests walking her like a horse; to <i>stew</i> is to perspire, but <i>stews</i> as a noun refers to an area occupied by prostitutes, which is apropos indeed.
70	<i>Sav.</i> Sure, sir, I cannot Dance with your gentlewomen; they are too <u>light</u> for me.	= <i>light</i> was a loaded Elizabethan word: it could mean (1) nimble, as in "light on one's feet"; (2) trivial, of slight importance or value; and (3) unchaste, wanton. ¹
72	Pray, break my head, and let me go.	72: Savil would still rather die than join the festivities.
74	<i>Capt.</i> He shall dance, he shall dance.	
76	<i>Young.</i> He shall dance and drink, and be drunk and dance, And be drunk again, and <u>shall see no meat</u> in a year.	= take no real food, as opposed to booze.
78		

80	Poet. And three quarters.	79: Bond calls this a "pointless addition" of the Poet's.
82	Young. And three quarters be it.	
84	[Knocking <i>within</i> .]	= from offstage.
86	Capt. Who knocks there? Let him in.	
88	Sav. [<i>Aside</i>] <u>Some</u> to <u>deliver</u> me, I hope.	= someone. = save.
90	<i>Enter Elder Loveless, disguised.</i>	89: an important stage convention of the era was that disguises were absolutely impenetrable to other characters, or at least until it served the plot for it to be otherwise.
92	Elder. Gentlemen, <u>God save you all!</u> My business is to one Master Loveless.	= common Elizabethan greeting.
94	Capt. This is the gentleman you mean; view him, And take his inventory; he's a right one.	
96	Elder. He promises no less, sir.	
98	Young. Sir, your business?	
100	Elder. Sir, I should let you know, – yet <u>I am loath</u> , –	= ie. "I hate to have to tell you this".
102	Yet I am sworn <u>to 't</u> , – <u>would</u> some other tongue Would speak it for me!	= "to do it". = "I wish".
104	Young. Out with it, i' God's name!	
106	Elder. All I desire, sir, is the patiënce And sufferance of a man; and, good sir, be not <u>Moved</u> more –	107-9: Elder, slow to report his "news", asks first that Young be prepared to accept it with fortitude. = emotionally stirred or upset.
108	Young. Than a <u>pottle</u> of sack will do: Here is my hand. Prithee, thy business?	= a half-gallon drinking vessel. ¹ 112: "I offer you my hand as a pledge not to get upset. Please, what is your business?"
110	Elder. Good sir, excuse me; and whatsoever You hear, think must have been known unto you; And <u>be yourself discreet</u> , and bear it nobly.	114-5: "forgive me for what I am about to tell you, but whatever I say, remember that someone had to tell you." = ie. "don't do anything rash". ²⁶
112	Young. Prithee, <u>despatch</u> me.	= despatch me usually means "kill me", but the sense here is one of "conclude your business" or "get to the point". ¹
114	Elder. Your brother's dead, sir.	
116	Young. Thou dost not mean – dead drunk?	
118	Elder. No, no; dead, and drowned at sea, sir.	
120	Young. Art sure he's dead?	
122	Elder. Too sure, sir.	
124	Young. Ay, but art thou very certainly sure of it?	
126	Elder. As sure, sir, as I tell it.	
128	Young. But art thou sure he came not up again?	

136	Elder. He may come up, but ne'er to call you brother.	
138	Young. But art sure he had water enough to drown him?	
140	Elder. Sure, sir, he <u>wanted</u> none.	= lacked.
142	Young. I would not have him <u>want</u> ; I loved him better. Here I forgive thee; and, i' faith, be plain;	= Young puns: to <i>want</i> is to live in poverty. ¹
144	How do I bear it?	
146	Elder. Very wisely, sir.	
148	Young. Fill him some wine. – Thou dost not see me <u>moved</u> ;	= upset.
150	These <u>transitory toys</u> ne'er trouble me;	= momentary or slight trifles, ¹ referring to the news of his brother's death.
152	He's in a better place, my friend, I know 't. Some fellows would have cried now, and have cursed thee, And <u>fallen out with their meat</u> , and <u>kept a pudder</u> ;	152: <i>fallen out...meat</i> = ie. lost their appetites. ¹ <i>kept a pudder</i> = made a noise or to-do. ²⁷ The OED considers <i>pudder</i> an alternate spelling of <i>pother</i> .
154	But all this helps not. He was too good for us; And let God keep him!	
156	There's the right use on 't, friend. <u>Off with</u> thy drink;	= ie. "finish off".
158	Thou hast a <u>spice</u> of sorrow <u>makes thee dry</u> . – Fill him another. – Savil, your master's dead;	= touch. ¹ = ie. "that is making you thirsty."
160	<u>And who am I now, Savil?</u> Nay, let's all bear it well: Wipe, Savil, wipe; tears are but thrown away. We shall have wenches now; shall we not, Savil?	= the answer to the question is, "your new master!"
162	Sav. Yes, sir.	160: the earliest editions print the words "Drink to my friend Captain" at the end of this speech, but are generally omitted, as they do not make sense given the dialogue that immediately follows.
164	Young. And drink innumerable?	
166	Sav. Yes, <u>forsooth</u> , sir.	= in truth.
168	Young. And you'll <u>strain courtesy</u> , and be drunk a little?	= the phrase means to be "over-insistent" about observing proper conduct or ceremony: ¹ Young is suggesting with some irony that Savil should lighten up and join the party.
170	Sav. I would be glad, sir, to do my weak endeavour.	
172	Young. And you may be brought in time to love a wench too?	
174	Sav. In time the sturdy oak, sir –	174: Savil alludes to the proverb, "in time, (a) small wedge will cleave the mightiest oake", which appeared in 1582 in the <i>Ekatompathia</i> , or <i>Watson's Passions</i> , a collection of love poems. ⁴ The adage seems in turn to have its "roots" at least as far back as Virgil, from Book 6 of the <i>Aeneid</i> : "piercing wedges cleave the stubborn oak".
176	Young. Some more wine For my friend there.	
178	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I shall be drunk <u>anon</u>	= soon.
180	For my good news: but I have a <u>loving brother</u> ,	= ie. in return for. = no doubt sarcastic.
182	That's my comfort.	

<p>184 Young. Here's to you, sir; This is the worst I wish you for your news: And if I had another elder brother, 186 And say it were his <u>chance to feed more fishes</u>, I should be still the same you see me now, 188 A poor contented gentleman. – More wine for my friend there; he's <u>dry</u> again. 190</p> <p>Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I shall be, if I follow this beginning.</p> <p>192 Well, my dear brother, if I <u>scape this drowning</u>, Tis your turn next to sink; you shall <u>duck</u> twice 194 Before I help you. – Sir, I cannot drink more; Pray, let me have your pardon. 196</p> <p>Young. Oh, Lord, sir, 'tis your modesty! – More wine; 198 Give him a bigger glass. – Hug him, my Captain: Thou shalt be my chief mourner. 200</p> <p>Capt. And this my <u>pennon</u>. – Sir, a full carouse 202 To you, and to my lord of land here. 204</p> <p>Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I feel a buzzing in my brains; pray God <u>They</u> bear this out, and I'll ne'er trouble them 206 So far again. – Here's to you, sir. 208</p> <p>Young. To my dear steward. Down o' your knees, you infidel, you pagan! 210 Be drunk, and penitent.</p> <p>212 Sav. Forgive me, sir. And I'll be anything. 214</p> <p>Young. Then be a <u>bawd</u>; 216 I'll have thee a <u>brave</u> bawd.</p> <p>218 Elder. Sir, I must take My leave of you, my business is so urgent. 220</p> <p>Young. Let's have a <u>bridling cast</u> before you go. – 222 Fill's a new <u>stoop</u>.</p> <p>224 Elder. I dare not, sir, by no means.</p> <p>226 Young. Have you any <u>mind</u> to a wench? I would <u>Fain</u> gratify you for the <u>pains</u> you took, sir. 228</p> <p>Elder. As little as to <u>the t'other</u>.</p> <p>230</p> <p>Young. If you find any <u>stirring</u>, do but say so. 232</p> <p>Elder. Sir, you are too <u>bounteous</u>: when I feel that <u>itching</u>,</p>	<p>= (bad) luck. = humorous for "drown".</p> <p>= ie. thirsty or needing a drink.</p> <p>191: Elder puns on dry, which could mean "emotionally numb", but also "sexually impotent", from over-drinking.</p> <p>= escape. = ie. in alcohol; Elder is still speaking in an aside here. = ie. slip under the water.</p> <p>195: ie. "please excuse me, but I must go now."</p> <p>= a plume or pennant; the Captain raises his tankard.³</p> <p>205-6: They bear...again = "if my brains (They) can manage all this alcohol, I'll never bother them again!"</p> <p>209: Young adopts the Poet's suggestion in line 61 above to force Savil to kneel and drink "in penitence."</p> <p>212: Savil kneels.</p> <p>= supplier of prostitutes. = excellent.</p> <p>= originally referring to a parting drink given to a man on horseback, but used generally for "a parting drink".¹ = stoup, cup.²</p> <p>223: note the double negative of the line.</p> <p>= ie. inclination or desire. = like to. = "efforts (on my behalf)".</p> <p>= the other; the phrase, though commonly used, is technically redundant, as t'other means "the other"; here Elder means he has as little desire for a woman as he does for another drink.</p> <p>= ie. impulse, desire.</p> <p>= generous. = lustful desire.</p>
---	---

234	You shall <u>assuage</u> it, sir, before another. <u>This only</u> , and farewell, sir:	= alleviate. = "just one more thing".
236	Your brother, when the storm was most extreme, Told all about him, he left a will, which lies <u>close</u>	= hidden.
238	Behind a chimney in the <u>matted</u> chamber. And so, as well, sir, as you have made me able, I take my leave.	= carpeted; a <i>mat</i> was a coarse, woven floor covering. ³
242	Young. Let us embrace him all. – If you grow dry before you end your business, Pray, take a <u>bait</u> here; I have a fresh <u>hogshead</u> for you.	= refreshment. ¹ = cask.
244		
246	Sav. [<i>Drunk</i>] You shall neither <u>will</u> nor choose, sir. My master is a wonderful fine gentleman; has a fine <u>state</u> , a very fine state, sir: I am his steward, sir, and his man.	= desire; Savil seems to hearken back to Elder's mention of a <i>will</i> above in line 237. = estate.
248		
250	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] <u>Would you were your own</u> , sir, as I left you!	= ie. "if only you were still your own man", a common expression for one who is not controlled by others, ie. Savil should be the one in charge here.
252	Well, I must <u>cast about</u> , or <u>all sinks</u> .	252: <i>cast about</i> = figure out a plan, but also <i>casting</i> as a net in the water. ¹ <i>all sinks</i> = all is lost; note Elder's repeated use of drowning imagery.
254	Sav. Farewell, gentleman, gentleman, gentleman!	254: Savil is hilariously drunk; the comic motif of the drunken or alcoholic servant was common in drama of the era.
256	Elder. What <u>would you</u> with me, sir!	= "do you want".
258	Sav. Farewell, gentleman!	
260	Elder. Oh, sleep, sir, sleep!	
262	[<i>Exit Elder.</i>]	
264	Young. Well, boys, you see what's <u>fallen</u> ; let's <u>in</u> and drink. And give thanks for it.	= taken place, happened. = ie. go in.
266		
268	Sav. Let's give thanks for it.	267: the early editions give this line to Captain, but it is clearly intended for Savil, who is drunkenly repeating everything he hears.
270	Young. Drunk, as I live!	
272	Sav. Drunk, as I live, boys!	
274	Young. Why, Now thou art able to <u>discharge thine office</u> , And <u>cast up a reckoning</u> of some weight. –	= "perform the duties of your position". = make a calculation, again alluding to Savil's position as steward; but Young clearly also uses <i>cast up</i> to mean "vomit". ¹
276	I will be knighted, for <u>my state will bear it</u> ;	= "I can afford it": the allusion is to the wholesale selling of knighthoods by James I to raise money for the government; the practice was mocked mercilessly by the writers and

Tis sixteen hundred, boys. Off with your husks;

278 I'll skin you all in satin.

280 **Capt.** Oh, sweet Loveless!

282 **Sav.** All in satin! Oh, sweet Loveless!

284 **Young.** March in, my noble compeers; –

286 And this, my countess, shall be led by two:
And so proceed we to the will.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT II, SCENE III.

A Room in Morecraft's House.

Enter Morecraft and Widow.

1 **More.** And, widow, as I say, be your own friend:

2 Your husband left you wealthy, ay, and wise;

Continue so, sweet duck, continue so.

4 Take heed of young smooth varlets, younger brothers;

6 They are worms that will eat through your bags;
They are very lightning, that, with a flash or two,
Will melt your money, and never singe your purse-strings;
8 They are colts, wench, colts, heady and dangerous,

dramatists of the day.

277: *sixteen hundred* = Young can now expect to enjoy and spend the full annual income from Elder's estate.

Off with your husks = "take off your clothes."

Young's companions are no doubt coarsely attired.
= dress.¹

= companions.

285: "and this guy, my dear (pointing to the Poet), shall be led by two women" (see line 4 above).

countess = Young, vulgar, uses this word because its first syllable would sound like the rude name for a woman's privates.

Entering Characters: *Morecraft* is a money-lender, and the gentleman who has taken all of Young Loveless' forfeited property; *Widow* is, well, a widow, and wealthy.

Since money-lenders charged interest on loans, and stood to take over the entire security if a borrower defaulted, they were understandably the target of much vicious humor on the Elizabethan stage. Unfortunately, there was a strong ethnic prejudice in the humor, as stage money-lenders were always Jewish.

As would be expected, the money-hungry Morecraft is courting the wealthy Widow.

= a common expression: "do what serves your own interest best." Morecraft is trying to convince the wealthy Widow to marry him.

= the adjectives *wealthy* and *wise* were frequently paired in the literature of the 16th and 17th centuries.

4-7: Morecraft counsels Widow to avoid marrying youthful flattering rogues (*smooth varlets*)¹ and *younger brothers* - with regards to the latter, the first-born son generally inherited the entire estate of a deceased man, leaving younger siblings to fend for themselves; Widow could expect such prospective husbands, he continues, to squander all her wealth; in other words, she would do herself a favour by engaging herself to a mature and rich man like himself!

= ie. money-bags

8: *colts* = common term describing lads who are young, inexperienced, and unmanageable.

heady = headstrong or capricious.¹

	Till we take 'em up, and make 'em fit for <u>bonds</u> .	= (1) mortgages, and (2) shackles; the idea is that those who default on Morecraft's mortgages will end up in debtor's prisons.
10	Look upon me; I have had, and have yet, <u>Matter of moment</u> , girl, matter of moment:	= as he is asking Widow to turn her eye to him, the sense may be "important or substantial qualities". ¹
12	You may meet with a worse <u>back</u> ; I'll not <u>commend</u> it.	12: back = ie. referring to his strength or ability to bear a burden; there may be some innuendo here regarding Morecraft's sexual prowess. commend it = (self) praise it.
14	Widow . Nor I neither, sir.	14ff: Widow's response indicates she is not interested in Morecraft.
16	More . Yet thus far, by your favour, widow, <u>'tis tough</u> .	= ie. referring again to his back.
18	Widow . And therefore not for my diet; for I love a tender one.	18: ie. "a gentle man", with a hint of "a solicitous or gentle lover".
20	More . Sweet widow, <u>leave your frumps</u> , and be <u>edified</u> . You know my <u>state</u> : I sell no <u>pérspectives</u> ,	= "cease your jeers, ie. mocking". ¹ = instructed. 21: state = ie. circumstances. perspective = a picture or glass that when viewed or viewed through produces a distorted image; ³ Morecraft's point here and in the next line is that he doesn't waste his time trying to make money by selling trivial items; there is perhaps an extra sense that Morecraft is not presenting a false image of himself. In verse, perspective(s) is usually stressed on its first syllable.
22	Scarfs, gloves, nor <u>hangers</u> , nor put my trust in shoe-ties; And <u>where</u> your husband in an age was rising	= a hanger is an ornamental strap, attached to the sword belt, which held one's sword. ^{1,3} 23-27: Morecraft compares how he has been getting wealthy in large leaps (as a usurer) while Widow's husband made his money in contemptibly small increments as a grocer, ie. selling spices, sugar, tea and coffee, etc. ¹ where = whereas. ⁴
24	By burnt figs, <u>dredged</u> with <u>meal</u> and powdered sugar, <u>Sanders</u> and grains, <u>worm-seed</u> , and rotten raisins,	= sprinkled. ¹ = ground grain. ¹ 25: Sanders = ie. sandalwood, a wood from India whose fragrant oil was used for perfuming. ¹⁰ worm-seed = a generic name for various plant which were used to kill or expel intestinal worms. ¹
26	And such vile tobacco that made the <u>footmen mangy</u> ;	26: footmen = servants who ran alongside a wealthy person's coach or carriage; mangy = a metaphor or exaggerated allusion to the skin disorders one might get from smoking or exposure to tobacco smoke.
28	I, in a year, have put up hundreds; Enclosed, my widow,	28-29: Morecraft uses the image of fencing in a meadow to describe his success in gaining much property via the failure of his borrowers to pay back his loans.
30	Those pleasant meadows, by a forfeit mortgage; For which the poor knight <u>takes a lone chamber</u> , Owes for his ale, and dare not beat his hostess.	30-31: Morecraft describes the ruined fortunes of once wealthy men who have lost their property to Morecraft.

32	Nay, more –	<i>takes a lone chamber</i> = rents a single room; <i>lone</i> probably puns with <i>loan</i> .
34	Widow. Good sir, no more. Whate'er my husband was,	
36	I know what I am; and, if you marry me, You must bear it bravely off, sir.	36: the sense is, "you must take me as I am."
38	More. <u>Not with the head</u> , sweet widow.	= an example of the ubiquitous joke about the horns a cuckolded husband was said to wear on his forehead. ³ Morehead is, with weak humour, suggesting he hopes that his burden will not be to be cheated on.
40	Widow. No, sweet sir, But with your shoulders: <u>I must have you dubbed</u> ;	= Widow requires that her next husband become a knight; another reference to notorious practice of selling knighthoods during the reign of James I.
42	For <u>under that</u> I will <u>not</u> stoop a feather.	= ie. below that status. = <i>not</i> did not appear in the very earliest quartos.
44	My husband was a fellow <u>loved</u> to toil, <u>Fed ill</u> , made gain his exercise, and so	= who loved. = ate poorly (because he was too cheap to consume or pay for quality food).
	Grew <u>costive</u> ; which, for that I was his wife,	45: <i>costive</i> = Widow uses <i>costive</i> to mean (1) miserly, and (2) with <i>fed ill</i> , constipated. ¹ 45-46: <i>for that...way to</i> = as a wife, Widow was obliged to live in as miserly a fashion as her husband demanded.
46	I gave way to, and <u>spun mine own smocks coarse</u> , And, sir, so little – but let that pass:	= Widow's image of her sewing her own undergarments (<i>smocks</i>), or repairing them continuously instead of ever getting new ones, graphically demonstrates the poverty of her personal possessions and her mean lifestyle; but the mention of her unmentionables causes Widow in line 47 to break off this train of slightly embarrassing thought.
48	Time, that wears all things out, wore out this husband;	= meaning both (1) unsuccessful and (2) barren or childless. ¹
50	Who, in penitence of such <u>fruitless</u> five years marriage, Left me great with his wealth; which, if you'll be	
52	A worthy <u>gossip</u> to, be knighted, sir.	= friend or sponsor to, as a godparent at a baptismal.
54	<i>Enter Savil.</i>	
56	More. Now, sir, from whom come you? whose <u>man</u> are you, sir?	= servant.
58	Sav. Sir, I come from young Master Loveless.	
60	More. Be silent, sir; I have no money, not a penny for you: He's sunk, your master's sunk; a perished man, sir.	61: Morecraft is referring to Young, who is completely broke, so Morecraft will lend him no more money; in using <i>sunk</i> and <i>perished</i> to refer to Young's financial ruin, however, he inadvertently uses words which obviously can apply to Elder, as Savil's response shows.
62		
64	Sav. Indeed, his brother's sunk, sir; God be with him! A perished man, indeed, and drowned at sea.	
66	More. How saidst thou, good my friend? his brother drowned?	

68 **Sav.** Untimely, sir, at sea.

70 **More.** And thy young master
Left sole heir?

72 **Sav.** Yes, sir.

74 **More.** And he wants money?

76 **Sav.** Yes;
78 And sent me to you, for he is now to be knighted.

80 **More.** Widow, be wise; there's more land coming, widow;
Be very wise, and give thanks for me, widow.

82 **Widow.** Be you very wise, and be knighted, and then
84 give thanks for me, sir.

86 **Sav.** What says your worship to this money?

88 **More.** I say,
He may have money, if he please.

90 **Sav.** A thousand, sir?

92 **More.** A thousand, sir, provided any wise, sir
94 His land lie for the payment; otherwise –

96 *Enter Young Loveless, Captain, Traveller,
Poet, and Tobacco-man.*

98 **Sav.** He's here himself, sir, and can better tell you.

100 **More.** My notable dear friend, and worthy Master
Loveless,
102 And now right worshipful, all joy and welcome!

104 **Young.** Thanks to my dear incloser, Master Morecraft:

Prithee, old angel-gold, salute my family;

106 I'll do as much for yours. –
108 This, and your own desires, fair gentlewoman.

110 *[Kisses Widow.]*

112 **Widow.** And yours, sir, if you mean well. –
[Aside] 'Tis a handsome gentleman.

80: as Young is now once again propertied, Morecraft will gladly lend him money, fully expecting him to default, thus forfeiting to Morecraft his inherited fortune.

83-84: Widow reminds Morecraft that she will not marry him without his getting knighted.

= way.

= his property stands in security for.

= an honorific title for man of importance.¹

= one who fences in common land in order to signal his taking possession of it.¹

105: **angel-gold** = an allusion to the English gold coin bearing the image of the archangel Michael.

salute = greet.

family = ie. his companions.

106: Young has noticed the attractive Widow; since **salute** can also more specifically mean "to greet with a kiss", and as it was the custom in England for newly-introduced strangers to exchange a kiss, Young suggests he will gladly **salute** the Widow. Elizabethan drama is full of characters who look forward to taking advantage of this custom when introduced to attractive members of the opposite sex.

114	<i>Young.</i> <u>Sirrah</u> , my brother's dead.	= a familiar form of address.
116	<i>More.</i> Dead!	
118	<i>Young.</i> Dead;	
120	And by this time <u>soused</u> for <u>ember-week</u> .	119: <i>soused</i> = pickled for preservation, but also with the secondary meaning of "soaked". ¹ <i>ember weeks</i> = four different weeks of the year during which fasting is observed on Wednesday, Friday and Saturday. ¹ The sense, per Weber, is that Elder's body has been preserved to be eaten in ember week.
122	<i>More.</i> Dead!	
124	<i>Young.</i> Drowned, drowned at sea, man; by the next fresh <u>conger</u> That comes, we shall hear more.	123: <i>conger</i> = a frighteningly large species of eel (up to ten feet in length) found off the coast of Britain. ¹ Young humorously talks of the conger as if it were a ship delivering news from afar, or a messenger in itself.
126	<i>More.</i> Now, <u>by the faith of my body</u> , It moves me much.	= it was common for a character to swear by his or her body or body parts. 127: at this point, Morehead begins to weep - but are they only crocodile tears?
128	<i>Young.</i> What, wilt thou be an ass,	
130	And weep for the dead? why, I thought nothing but A <u>general inundation</u> would have moved thee.	= large flood, which, as Bond states, would swallow up Morecraft's land. ³
132	Prithee, be quiet; he hath left his land behind him.	
134	<i>More.</i> Oh, has he so?	
136	<i>Young.</i> Yes, faith, I thank him for 't; I have all, boy. Hast any ready money?	
138	<i>More.</i> Will you sell, sir?	
140	<i>Young.</i> No, not outright, good <u>Gripe</u> ; <u>marry</u> , a mortgage. Or such a slight security.	= vulture. ³ = a mild oath, derived from the Virgin Mary.
142	<i>More.</i> I have No money, sir, for mortgage: if you will sell, And all or none, I'll <u>work a new mine for you</u> .	144-6: Morecraft decides he wants to buy the Loveless estate outright. = ie. provide him with a fresh source of funds.
144	<i>Sav.</i> Good sir, look afore you; he'll work you out of all	148f: in this difficult speech, Savil appears to be explaining to Young the consequences of selling his land to Morecraft, who Savil expects will cheat Young in some way; Young will then have no choice but to go to sea, perhaps joining the navy (hence the reference to the poor diet he would expect to have), and expect to be sunk by an enemy ship.
150	else. If you sell all your land, you have <u>sold</u> your country; and then you must <u>go to sea</u> , to <u>seek your brother</u> , and there lie pickled in a <u>powdering-tub</u> , and break your	= sold out, betrayed ¹ = ie. go to. = ie. who is already underwater. = a vat used for pickling fish, but <i>tub</i> could also humorously describe a boat. ¹ It is worth noting that <i>powdering tub</i> was also used to describe a sweating treatment for venereal disease.
152	teeth with <u>biscuits and hard beef</u> , that must have <u>watering</u> , sir: and where's your three hundred pounds a-	= representative food from a British sailor's diet. = ie. soaked in water, they are so dry. ¹

154	year in drink, then? <u>If you'll tun up the Straits</u> , you may;	154: <i>tun up the straits</i> = Bond suggests the meaning to be, "the only drink you will get is salt-water."
156	for you have no calling for drink there but with a cannon, nor no <u>scoring</u> but on your ship's sides; and	<i>tun up</i> = store in casks; ¹ later editions print <i>turn up</i> , while Dyce wonders if the correct wording should have been <i>run up</i> ; these alternatives do seem to make more sense. <i>the Straits</i> = usually this refers to the Straits of Gibraltar, but could also refer to the Straits of Dover. ¹
158	then, if you scape with life, and <u>take a faggot-boat</u> and a bottle of <u>usquebaugh</u> , come home, poor man, like a <u>type</u>	= the tallying up with marks of one's tab at a tavern, but also suggesting an enemy <i>cannon</i> wrecking or marking his ship's sides. = get rescued or picked up by a passing timber ship. ³
160	of <u>Thames-street</u> , stinking of <u>pitch</u> and <u>poor-John</u> . I cannot tell, sir; I would be loath to see it.	158: <i>usquebaugh</i> = whiskey. <i>type</i> = image or symbol. ¹ 159: <i>Thames Street</i> parallels the Thames River. Also known informally as Stockfishmonger's Row, its south side contained all the old walled city's wharfs. ¹⁴
162	<i>Capt.</i> Steward, you are an ass, a <u>measled mongrel</u> ; and, were it not against <u>the peace of my sovereign</u> friend	<i>pitch</i> = a type of tar used to calk ships. <i>poor-john</i> = salted and dried hake (a fish). ³ = leprous. ¹ = a play on the phrase "king's peace", which referred to the sovereign's guarantee of public order.
164	here, I would break your forecasting <u>coxcomb</u> , <u>dog</u> , I would, even with thy <u>staff of office</u> there, thy pen and	164: <i>coxcomb</i> = head. <i>dog</i> = the Captain's use of canine-related name-calling is highly insulting.
166	inkhorn. – Noble boy, the god of gold here has <u>said</u> thee well:	= a rod that symbolized certain officials' positions, used metaphorically here by the Captain. = "supplied your needs"; ³ the first two quartos print <i>sed</i> here, the subsequent ones <i>fed</i> . ⁴
168	Take money for thy <u>dirt</u> . <u>Hark</u> , and believe; Thou art cold of constitution, thy <u>seat</u> unhealthful;	= humorous term for "land" or "property". = "listen to me". = ie. house.
170	Sell, and be wise: <u>we are three</u> that will adorn thee,	= the Captain may have meant to say "we are <i>four</i> " here, as <i>we</i> presumably includes the Poet, the Traveller, and the Tobacco-Man, as well as himself; on the other hand, there may be a continuity error here, and either Traveller or Tobacco-Man may not supposed to be on stage right now - neither one of the pair appears again in our play after this scene; indeed, the Poet's assertion at line 178 below that the four of them - the Captain, the Poet, Young, and one other person - will form a family, necessarily excludes one of the two.
172	And live according to thine own heart, child; Mirth shall be only ours, and only ours	= <i>black eyes</i> were considered evidence of great beauty. ¹
174	Shall be the <u>black-eyed beauties</u> of the time. Money makes men eternal.	
176	<i>Poet.</i> Do what you will, it is the noblest course: Then you may live without <u>the charge of people</u> ;	= having to support other people, such as the servants necessary to manage the household; the Poet of course exempts himself and Young's other drinking companions.
178	Only we four will make a family; Ay, and an age that shall beget new annals,	
180	In which I'll write thy life, my son of pleasure,	

182 Equal with Nero or Caligula.

184 **Young.** What men were they, Captain?

186 **Capt.** Two roaring boys of Rome, that made all split.

188 **Young.** Come, sir, what dare you give?

190 **Sav.** You will not sell, sir?

192 **Young.** Who told you so, sir?

194 **Sav.** Good sir, have a care.

196 **Young.** Peace, or I'll tack your tongue up to your roof. –

198 **More.** Six thousand pound, sir.

200 **Capt.** Take it; h' as overbidden, by the sun!
Bind him to his bargain quickly.

202 **Young.** Come, strike me luck with earnest, and draw
the writings.

204 **More.** There's a God's penny for thee.

206 **Sav.** Sir, for my old master's sake, let my farm be
excepted:

208 If I become his tenant, I am undone,
My children beggars, and my wife God knows what.
210 Consider me, dear sir.

212 **More.** I'll have all in
Or none.

214 **Young.** All in, all in. Despatch the writings.

216 [Exit Young Loveless with Comrades.]

218 **Widow.** [Aside] Go, thou art a pretty fore-handed
220 fellow! would thou wert wiser!

222 **Sav.** Now do I sensibly begin to feel

= perhaps an odd choice of heroes to emulate, but no doubt the Poet is focusing on their pleasure-seeking lifestyles.

185: **roaring** = rowdy, boisterous; a very common adjective in this period.
made all split = made all go to pieces, ie. upset the status quo.

187: Young asks Morecraft how much he will offer for the Loveless lands.

195: **Peace** = "quiet!"
tack = fasten or nail.¹
roof = ie. of his mouth

= the value of a property was typically calculated by multiplying its annual income by 12;⁵ Young has mentioned that the income of his property is 1600 pounds per year, thus its value is more like 19,000 pounds; Morecraft's offer is clearly low - not that Young or his friends would know that.

203: **strike me luck** = to **strike someone luck** means to offer the seller a "luck-penny" on closing a deal;¹ Morecraft accedes to Young's request in the next line below.
writings = ie. the legal documents necessary to effect the sale of the property.

= a small amount of money serving as a symbolic down payment on a deal.¹

= Savil appears to live with his family on a farm located on the Loveless' property.

= ruined.

= the entire property.

= prudent or thrifty;¹ she is being ironic.
= "if only"; Widow is disappointed that Young does not possess greater financial acumen.

= acutely;¹ the word **sensible** was used more literally then, relating directly to the physical senses.

Myself a rascal. Would I could teach a school,
 224 Or beg, or lie well! I am utterly undone. –
 Now, he that taught thee to deceive and cozen,
 226 Take thee to his mercy! so be it!

[Exit Savil.]

230 **More.** Come, widow, come, never stand upon a
 knighthood;
 'Tis a mere paper honour, and not proof
 232 Enough for a sergeant. Come, come, I'll make thee –

234 **Wid.** To answer in short, 'tis this, sir, – no knight, no
 widow.
 If you make me anything, it must be a lady;
 236 And so I take my leave.

238 **More.** Farewell, sweet widow,
 And think of it.

240 **Widow.** Sir, I do more than think of it;
 242 It makes me dream, sir.

[Exit Widow.]

246 **More.** She's rich, and sober if this itch were from her:

And say I be at charge to pay the footmen,
 248 And the trumpets, ay, and the horsemen too,

And be a knight, and she refuse me then;
 250 Then am I hoist into the subsidy,
 And so, by consequence, should prove a coxcomb:
 252 I'll have a care of that. Six thousand pound,
 And then the land is mine: there's some refreshing yet.
 254

[Exit.]

END OF ACT II.

= vagabond or beggar.³ = "I wish".

= ruined.
 = ie. Morecraft. = cheat.

230: ie. "don't let your marriage to me be held up by a trivial detail - your requirement that I purchase a knighthood."
 231-2: **not proof...sergeant** = not enough to even gain him the appointment of a sergeant-at-law³ (a feudal status appointed by the crown).¹

235: a woman's husband must attain the rank of at least knight in order for her to be called "my lady".²⁸

= on.

246: **sober** = ie. "could be considered moderate in temperament".
itch = ie. the desire to have a knight for a husband.

247f: Morecraft is unwilling to pay the burdensome costs and fees required for one to purchase and maintain a knighthood. Lines 247-8 refer specifically to the expenses he must incur for the ceremonial ride to be knighted at Windsor Castle.³

249: "and what if I pay out all this money for a knighthood, only to have her decide in the end not to marry me?"
 = become liable for the special taxes levied on knights.³
 = fool.

ACT III.

SCENE I.

A Room in Lady's House.

Enter Abigail.

1 **Abig.** If he but follow me, as all my hopes
2 Tell me he's man enough, up goes my rest,
And, I know, I shall draw him.

4
6
8 *Enter Welford, with Abigail's glove.*

8 **Wel.** [*Aside*] This is the strangest pampered piece of
flesh towards fifty, that ever frailty coped withal. What

a trim l'envoy here she has put upon me! These women

10 are a proud kind of cattle, and love this whoreson doing

so directly, that they will not stick to make their very

12 skins bawds to their flesh. Here's dog-skin and storax

14 sufficient to kill a hawk: what to do with it, beside
nailing it up amongst Irish heads of teer, to shew the

16 mightiness of her palm, I know not. There she is: I must
enter into dialogue – Lady, you have lost your glove.

18 **Abig.** Not, sir, if you have found it.

20 **Wel.** It was my meaning, lady, to restore it.

22 **Abig.** 'Twill be uncivil in me to take back
A favour fortune hath so well bestowed, sir:
24 Pray, wear it for me.

26 **Wel.** [*Aside*]
I had rather wear a bell, – But, hark you, mistress,
28 What hidden virtue is there in this glove.

Entering Character: Abigail has dropped her glove off-
stage, hoping Welford will gallantly retrieve it for her.

= expectations.

= an expression from cards, meaning to "stand on one's
hand";³ **draw** in line 3 continues the gaming metaphor;
man enough and **up** are likely intended to be vaguely
dirty.

5: Welford has taken the bait!

8: **towards fifty** = a comment on Abigail's age.
frailty = moral vulnerability.

withal = with.

= a kind of post-script attached to a poem, usually to bring
the poem to the attention of a particular person,⁴ here
metaphorically describing the glove.

10-11: **love...directly** = women of this type love to flirt in
a very obvious way, which Welford, as a gentleman,
disapproves of - at least from the repulsive Abigail.
= hesitate or scruple.¹

12: **dog-skin** = meaning the glove; the leather made from
the skin of canines was used to make gloves, caps, etc.¹
storax = a pleasant-smelling extract from the sweet-
gum tree, used as a perfume;³ Welford's point is that the
glove is drenched in perfume.

14: **Irish heads of teer** = the heads of the extinct great Irish
elk, which were prominently displayed by those lucky
enough to own them; Dyce quotes an earlier editor who
suggests **teer** may be the Irish pronunciation of **deer**.
shew = ie. show off.

15: **mightiness** = great size.

palm = the part of the antlers of certain deer, such
as the moose, that is filled in between the branches,
resulting in a broad flat surface.

24: it was a custom for a woman to give her lover a token to
wear or keep about him.

= as worn on the cap of a jester,¹ hence, "be a professed
fool" (Weber, p. 187).

30	That you would have me wear it? Is it good Against sore eyes, or will it charm the tooth-ache? Or these <u>red tops</u> , being steeped in white wine, soluble,	= ie. red tips ¹ (on the fingers of the glove).
32	Will 't kill <u>the itch</u> ? or has it so concealed A <u>providence</u> to keep my hand from <u>bonds</u> ?	= scabies, or a general dermatological scabbing condition. ¹ 32-33: <i>has it so...bonds?</i> = "does it have the foresight or capability of guidance (<i>providence</i>) to keep me from prison (<i>bonds</i> = shackles)?"
34	If it have none of <u>these</u> , and <u>prove no more</u> <u>But</u> a bare glove of half-a-crown a pair, "Twill be but half a courtesy; I wear two always. Faith, let's draw cuts; one will do me no pleasure.	= ie. "these beneficial properties". = ie. "prove to be nothing more". = than.
38		36: Welford disingenuously suggests they draw lots to see who should get both gloves, since having only one is worthless; he refuses to acknowledge the significance of Abigail's offer that he should wear the one as a favour.
40	<i>Abig.</i> [<i>Aside</i>] The tenderness of his years keeps him as yet in ignorance: He's a <u>well-moulded</u> fellow, and I wonder	40: Abigail assumes Welford is too young to understand the flirting significance of the glove - but she is only fooling herself. = well-built.
42	<u>His blood should stir no higher</u> : but 'tis his <u>want</u> Of company: I must grow nearer to him.	41: <i>his blood...higher</i> = that his passion is not aroused to a greater degree; <i>higher</i> is of course suggestive. 42-43: <i>but tis...company</i> = ie. Welford's lack (<i>want</i>) of amorousness is only a function of his loneliness.
44		
46	<i>Enter Elder Loveless, disguised.</i>	Entering Character: having delivered the news of his own death to his brother, Elder now arrives at Lady's house to check on whether she has remained faithful to him during his absence.
48	<i>Elder.</i> God save you both!	
50	<i>Abig.</i> And pardon you, sir! this is somewhat rude: How came you hither?	49-50: Abigail is annoyed that the stranger has interrupted her attempt to seduce Welford.
52	<i>Elder.</i> Why, through the doors; they are open.	
54	<i>Wel.</i> <u>What</u> are you? and what business have you here?	= who.
56	<i>Elder.</i> More, I believe, than you have.	
58	<i>Abig.</i> Who would this fellow speak with? Art <u>thou</u> sober?	= Abigail shows her contempt for the intruder by addressing him as <i>thou</i> .
60	<i>Elder.</i> Yes; I come not here <u>to sleep</u> .	= ie. to sleep off his drunkenness.
62	<i>Wel.</i> Prithee, what art thou?	62ff: Elder and Welford also begin to address each other with the disrespectful <i>thou</i> .
64	<i>Elder.</i> As much, gay man, as thou art; I am a gentleman.	
66	<i>Wel.</i> Art thou no more?	
68	<i>Elder.</i> Yes, more than thou dar'st be, – a soldier.	
70	<i>Abig.</i> Thou dost not come to quarrel?	
72	<i>Elder.</i> No, not with women. I come to speak here with a gentlewoman.	
74		

76 **Abig.** Why, I am one.

78 **Elder.** But not with one so gentle.

80 **Wel.** This is a fine fellow.

Elder. Sir, I am not fine yet; I am but new come over:

82 Direct me with your ticket to your tailor,
 84 And then I shall be fine, sir. – Lady, if there be
 86 A better of your sex within this house,
 88 Say I would see her.

Abig. Why, am not I good enough for you, sir?

Elder. Your way, you'll be too good. Pray, end my business. –
 90 [*Aside*] This is another suitor: oh, frail woman!

92 **Wel.** [*Aside*]
 94 This fellow, with his bluntness, hopes to do
 96 More than the long suits of a thousand could:
 98 Though he be sour, he's quick; I must not trust him. –

96 Sir, this lady is not to speak with you;
 98 She is more serious. You smell as if
 100 You were new calked: go, and be handsome, and then
 102 You may sit with her serving-men.

Elder. What are you, sir?

Wel. Guess by my outside.

Elder. Then I take you, sir,
 106 For some new silken thing, weaned from the country,
 108 That shall, when you come to keep good company,
 110 Be beaten into better manners. – Pray,
 112 Good proud gentlewoman, help me to your mistress.

Abig. How many lives hast thou, that thou talk'st thus
 rudely?

Elder. But one, one; I am neither cat nor woman.

114 **Wel.** And will that one life, sir, maintain you ever

= noble or well-born; Elder is deliberately ambiguous: he could mean (1) his mission is to speak to one who is not as gentle as Abigail (complimentary), or (2) she is with someone who is not particularly gentle, ie. Welford (insulting).

81: **fine** = well-dressed (punning); Elder arrives in rather distressed garb, and he will comment repeatedly and sarcastically about Welford's well-tailored dress.
new come over = newly arrived in England.

= IOU; Elder implies that Welford cannot actually afford his clothing, but has taken delivery of his outfit on credit.

89: **Your way** = likely suggestive.
end my business = ie. "let me complete my errand."

90: **This** = ie. Welford.
frail woman = morally weak; Elder assumes that Lady has already accepted Welford as a suitor.

93-5: Welford assumes in turn that Elder is also a suitor for Lady's hand; Welford prefers the old-fashioned, indirect style of courtly wooing (**long suits**), but recognizes the possible efficacy of Elder's more direct approach.

98: **calked** = ie. like a ship that has been **calked** with pitch.
be handsome = behave appropriately.¹

= who.

= ie. outfit, clothing.

105-8: Elder suggests Welford is a country boor who has tried to buy his way into society.

110: Abigail suggests that Elder is risking his life too casually in being so openly insulting to Welford, who presumably would be expected to defend his honour against Elder.

= Elder alludes to the still-popular adage that was first mentioned in English literature by John Heywood in his influential collection of *Proverbs* of 1546, in which he wrote "a woman hath nyne lyues lyke a cat."

= "always sustain you", ie. "always keep you alive".

116	In such bold sauciness?	
118	Elder. Yes, amongst a nation of such men as you are, And be no worse for wearing. – Shall I speak	118-9: Elder has no reason to fear for his life, if England contains only men as presumably weak as Welford.
120	With this lady?	
122	Abig. No, <u>by my troth</u> , shall you not.	= in truth.
124	Elder. I must stay here, then.	
126	Wel. That you shall not, neither.	
128	Elder. Good <u>fine thing</u> , tell me why?	= another reference to Welford's fine dress.
130	Wel. Good angry thing, I'll tell you: This is no place for such <u>companions</u> ;	= fellows.
132	Such <u>lousy</u> gentlemen shall find their business Better i' <u>the suburbs</u> ; there your strong <u>pitch-perfume</u> ,	= covered with lice, ie. filthy. 133: the suburbs = traditional location of the brothels of a Renaissance city. pitch-perfume = Welford again notes that Elder smells of pitch .
134	Mingled with <u>lees of ale</u> , shall <u>reek in fashion</u> : This is no <u>Thames-street</u> , sir.	134: lees of ale = the sediment at the bottom of a cup of ale; Welford hints that Elder likely drinks a lot. reek in fashion = the idea is that Elder's peculiar odour will allow him to fit right in with those who frequent the less desirable part of town. = another reference to the street that would have been populated by those who make their living from the sea.
136	Abig. This gentleman informs you truly;	
138	Prithee, be satisfied, and seek the suburbs: Good captain, or whatever title else	
140	The <u>warlike eel-boats</u> have bestowed upon thee, Go and reform thyself; <u>prithee</u> , be <u>sweeter</u> ;	= a clever oxymoron by Abigail. = please. = ie. sweeter-smelling.
142	And know my lady speaks with no such <u>swabbers</u> .	= low ranking sailors, such as those who swab the deck. ²
144	Elder. You cannot talk me out with your tradition Of <u>wit you pick from plays</u> : go to, I have found ye. –	= Bond suggests that Elder is accusing Abigail of stealing her insults from Shakespeare's <i>Twelfth Night</i> , which would have been performed earlier in the 1600's: in Act I.v of that play, there is a dialogue similar to the present one, in which Maria is encouraging Viola to depart, but she refuses, calling Maria a swabber .
146	And for you, tender sir, whose <u>gentle</u> blood Runs in your nose, and makes you <u>snuff</u> at all	= noble. = sniff, out of a feeling of superiority.
148	<u>But three-piled people</u> , I do let you know, He that <u>begot</u> your worship's satin suit,	= ie. except at those who wear the finest clothing, especially the finest velvet; ¹ three-pile refers to a method of producing velvet "in which the loops of the pile-warp (which constitutes the nap) are formed by three threads, producing a pile of treble thickness" (OED, <i>three-pile</i> , <i>adj.</i>).
150	Can make no men, sir: I will see this lady,	149-150: He that...no men = the idea is that clothes don't make one a man; begot means "furnished", but is also humorously used to mean "gave birth to", along with make no men .

152	And, with the reverence of <u>your silkenhip</u> , In <u>these old ornaments</u> .	= a mock title for Welford. = ie. his old and worn outfit (<i>ornaments</i> = attire). ¹
154	Wel. You will not, sure?	
156	Elder. Sure, sir, I shall.	
158	Abig. You would be beaten out?	
160	Elder. Indeed, I would not; or, if I would be beaten, Pray, who shall beat me? this good gentleman	
162	Looks as he were <u>o' the peace</u> .	= ie. an officer of the peace, one who is sworn to maintain order. ¹
164	Wel. Sir, you shall see that. Will you get you out?	
166	Elder. Yes; <u>that</u> , that shall <u>correct</u>	
168	Your boy's tongue. Dare you fight? I will stay here still.	167: <i>that</i> = ie. Elder's sword; Elder is responding to Welford's question: "I will <i>get out</i> that thing that will punish (<i>correct</i>) your tongue."
170	[<i>They draw their swords, and fight.</i>]	
172	Abig. Oh, <u>their things are out!</u> – Help, help, for God's	= typical, and in this case exceptionally funny, double entendre from Abigail.
174	sake! – Madam! – Jesus! They <u>foin</u> at one another! – Madam! why, <u>who is within there?</u>	= lunge or thrust with a sword, no doubt also bawdy. ¹ = ie. "is anyone out there?"
176	[<i>Exit.</i>]	
178	<i>Enter Lady.</i>	
180	Lady. Who breeds this rudeness?	
182	Wel. This uncivil fellow: He says he comes from sea; where, I believe,	
184	H'as <u>purged away</u> his manners.	184: "he has eliminated his manners from his body;" the the word <i>purge</i> was used to describe vomiting or evacuation of the bowels. ¹
186	Lady. What of him?	
188	Wel. Why, he will rudely, without once "God bless you," <u>Press to your privacies</u> , and no denial	= "intrude on your privacy"
190	Must stand <u>betwixt</u> your person and his business: I <u>let go</u> his ill language.	= between. = the sense seems to be "took exception to".
192	Lady. Sir, have you	
194	Business with me?	
196	Elder. Madam, some I have;	
198	But not so serious to <u>pawn</u> my life for't. If you <u>keep this quarter</u> , and maintain about you	196-201: Elder allows that Lady may be pleased to keep such ruffians as Welford about her, but at what cost to her reputation? = ie. trade or sell. = maintain this posture or attitude. ³
200	Such <u>Knights o' the Sun</u> as this is, to defy	= meaning Welford: Bond suggests this is a reference to a well-known Spanish romance, which had been translated into English under a very long title, part of which read <i>Knight of the Sunne</i> . ³
202	Men of <u>employment</u> to you, <u>you may live</u> ; <u>But in what fame?</u>	= ie. better use. = ie. "sure, you can live this way". = ie. "but with what affect to your reputation?"

<p>204 Lady. Pray, <u>stay</u>, sir: who has wronged you?</p> <p>206 Elder. Wrong me he cannot, though uncivilly He flung his wild words at me: but to you, I think, he did no honour, to deny</p> <p>208 The haste I come <u>withal a passage to</u> you, Though I seem coarse.</p> <p>210 Lady. Excuse me, gentle sir; 'twas <u>from my knowledge</u>, 212 And shall have no protection. – And to <u>you</u>, sir, You have shewed more <u>heat than wit</u>, and from yourself 214 Have <u>borrowed power</u> I never gave you here, To do these <u>vild</u> unmanly things. My house</p> <p>216 Is no <u>blind street</u> to <u>swagger</u> in; and my favours Not doting yet on your unknown <u>deserts</u> 218 So far, that I should make you master of my business:</p> <p>My <u>credit</u> yet stands fairer with the people 220 Than to be <u>tried</u> with swords; and they that come To <u>do me service</u> must not think to win me 222 With <u>hazard</u> of a murder: if your love Consist in fury, carry it to the <u>camp</u>.</p> <p>224 And there, in honour of some <u>common mistress</u>, <u>Shorten your youth</u>. I pray, be better tempered; 226 And give me leave a while, sir.</p> <p>228 Wel. You must have it.</p> <p>230 [Exit Welford.]</p> <p>232 Lady. Now, sir, your business?</p> <p>234 Elder. First, I thank you for <u>schooling</u> this young fellow, Whom his own follies, which he's prone enough 236 Daily to fall into, if you but frown, Shall <u>level</u> him a way to his repentance. 238 Next, I should <u>rail</u> at you; but you are a woman, And anger's lost upon you.</p> <p>240 Lady. Why at me, sir? 242 I never did you wrong; for, to my knowledge. This is the first sight of you.</p> <p>244 Elder. You have done <u>that</u>, 246 I must confess, <u>I have the least curse in</u>, Because <u>the least acquaintance</u>: but there be 248 (If there be honour in the minds of men) Thousands, when they shall know what I deliver, 250 (As all good men must share in't), will to shame</p>	<p>= "hold on a moment".</p> <p>= with. = ie. in visiting or traveling to.</p> <p>= "(done) unknown to me". = ie. Welford. = "unbridled emotion than intelligence". = assumed authority. = despicable;¹ vild was a commonly-used alternative for vile.</p> <p>216: blind street = ie. dead end street, with the sense of having no traffic, so that one could bluster or assault another (swagger)^{1,3} without being interrupted; the phrase survives today in the expression blind alley.¹ 216-8: and my...business = "and since I don't know anything about you, I of course have given you no authority to make any decisions regarding my business." deserts (line 217) = merits.</p> <p>= reputation. = put to the test, ie. fought over. = "become my lovers or courtiers".³ = risk. = ie. a soldiers' camp.</p> <p>= prostitute.¹ = ie. by being killed in a fight over the woman. 226: Lady asks Welford to excuse himself.</p> <p>= the verb "to school", meaning to educate, has been used at least as far back as the mid-15th century.¹</p> <p>= direct.² = rant, complain.</p> <p>= that which. = "I am the least cursed by" or "I suffer the least by".³ = "I know you the least".</p>
---	---

252	Blast your black memory.	252: ie. "ruin your reputation forever."
254	<i>Lady.</i> How is this, good sir?	
256	<i>Elder.</i> 'Tis <u>that</u> , that if you have a soul, will choke it: You've killed a gentleman.	= "it is such a thing that".
258	<i>Lady.</i> I killed a gentleman!	
260	<i>Elder.</i> You, and your cruèlty, have killed him, woman! And such a man (let me be angry in't)	= more than.
262	Whose least worth weighed <u>above</u> all womens' virtues That are; I spare you <u>all to come</u> too: guess <u>him now</u> .	= ie. further details. = ie. "who it is (I am talking about)."
264	<i>Lady.</i> I am so innocent, I cannot, sir.	
266	<i>Elder.</i> <u>Repent</u> , you mean. You are a <u>perfect</u> woman,	= Elder finishes Lady's sentence. = "the epitome of a".
268	And, as <u>the first</u> was, made for man's <u>undoing</u> .	= the first woman, ie. Eve. = ruin.
270	<i>Lady.</i> Sir, <u>you have missed your way</u> ; I am not she.	= "you have lost your path", ie. he is mistaken. ¹
272	<i>Elder.</i> Would he had missed his way too, though he had wandered	
274	Farther than women are ill-spoken of, So he had missed this misery, – <u>you</u> , lady!	= "yes, it is you".
276	<i>Lady.</i> How do you do, sir?	276: perhaps ironic: "are you alright?"
278	<i>Elder.</i> Well enough, I hope, While I can keep myself from <u>such temptations</u> .	= ie. getting involved with a woman.
280	<i>Lady.</i> Pray, leap into this matter; whither would you?	
282	<i>Elder.</i> You had a <u>servant</u> , that your peevishness <u>Enjoined</u> to travel.	= lover. = ie. caused or forced. ¹
286	<i>Lady.</i> Such a one I have still, And should be grievèd it were otherwise.	287, 289: note how <i>grieved</i> is disyllabic in line 287, but monosyllabic in line 289, to fit the meter.
288	<i>Elder.</i> Then have your <u>asking</u> , and be grieved; he's dead!	= wish or desire.
290	How you will answer for his worth I know not; But this I am sure, either he, or you, or both,	
292	<u>Were</u> stark mad, <u>else</u> he might have lived to have given A stronger testimony to the world	= must be. = or else.
294	Of what he might have been. He was a man I knew but in <u>his evening</u> ; <u>ten suns after</u> ,	= ie. "at the end of his life". = "ten days after we met".
296	Forced by a tyrant storm, our beaten <u>bark</u> <u>Bulged</u> under us: in which sad parting blow	= ship. = caved in, broke apart. ¹
298	He called upon his saint, but not for life, <u>On</u> you, <u>unhappy</u> woman; and, whilst all	= but on. = unfortunate.
300	Sought to preserve their souls, he desperately <u>Embraced a wave</u> , crying to all that saw it,	= ie. submitted to be drowned.
302	"If any live, go to my <u>Fate</u> , that forced me To this <u>untimely end</u> , and make her happy."	= allusion to the mythical three <i>Fates</i> , the goddesses who determined how long one lived, but meaning Lady. = premature death.
304	His name was Loveless; and I <u>scaped</u> the storm; And now you have my business.	= escaped.

<p>306 Lady. 'Tis too much. 308 <u>Would</u> I had been that storm! <u>he had not</u> perished. If you'll rail now, I will forgive you, sir; 310 Or if you'll call in <u>more</u>, if any more Come from this ruin, I shall justly suffer 312 What they can say: I do confess myself A guilty cause in this. I would say more, 314 But grief is grown too great to be delivered.</p> <p>316 Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I like this well: these women are strange things. – 318 'Tis somewhat of the <u>latest</u> now to weep; You should have wept when he was going from you, 320 And chained him with those tears at home.</p> <p>322 Lady. Would you had told me then so! these two arms Had been his sea.</p> <p>324 Elder. Trust me, you <u>move</u> me much: but, <u>say</u> he lived, 326 These were forgotten things again.</p> <p>328 Lady. [<i>Aside</i>] Ay, say you so? Sure, <u>I should know that voice</u>: this is knavery;</p> <p>330 I'll <u>fit</u> you for it. – Were he living, sir, I would persuade you to be charitable, 332 Ay, and confess <u>we</u> are not all so ill As your opinion holds us. Oh, my friend, 334 What penance shall I pull upon my fault, Upon my most unworthy self for this?</p> <p>336 Elder. <u>Leave to love others</u>; 'twas some jealousy 338 That turned him desperate.</p> <p>340 Lady. [<i>Aside</i>] I'll be with you straight: Are you <u>wrung</u> there?</p> <p>342 Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] This works <u>amain</u> upon her.</p> <p>344 Lady. I do confess there is a <u>gentleman</u> 346 Has borne me long good will.</p> <p>348 Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I do not like that.</p> <p>350 Lady. And vowed a thousand services to me; To me, <u>regardless of him</u>: but since fate, 352 That no power can withstand, has taken from me My first and best love, and to weep away 354 My youth is a mere folly, I will <u>shew</u> you What I determine, sir; you shall know all. – 356 [<i>To a servant within</i>] Call Master Welford, there! – That gentleman 358 I mean to make the model of my fortunes,</p>	<p>= "I would have preferred that". = "then he would not have".</p> <p>= ie. any other survivors of the shipwreck.</p> <p>314: ie. "my grief prevents me from saying more"; note also the fabulous alliteration with gr in this line.</p> <p>= ie. latest fashion.</p> <p>322-3: these two arms...his sea = a neat metaphor: rather her arms had embraced him than did the sea.</p> <p>= affect, touch. = suppose.</p> <p>326: ie. "if he had lived, you would forget your repentance, and return to your cruel ways"</p> <p>= an Elizabethan character's disguise was impenetrable, at least until it suited the plot to have it be otherwise; Lady finally recognizes Elder by his voice.</p> <p>= punish.¹</p> <p>= ie. women.</p> <p>= "forsake loving other men"; Elder, not too subtly, plants the idea that Lady should not pursue other men, before Elder has a chance to "return".</p> <p>337: ie. she will get back at him immediately (straight).¹</p> <p>= ie. in anguish.</p> <p>= speedily, or with full force;² Elder expects his strategy is succeeding.</p> <p>= ie. another man; Lady has Welford in mind for the part; now her revenge begins!</p> <p>= without regard for Elder's existence as her present lover.</p> <p>= show.</p> <p>358: ie. Lady means to share Welford's fortunes.³</p>
---	--

360	And in his chaste embraces keep alive The memory of my <u>lost lovely Loveless</u> : He is somewhat like him too.	= note the interesting combination alliteration and wordplay in this clause.
362	Elder. Then you can <u>love</u> ?	= ie. "love again", or "still love another".
364	Lady. Yes, certain, sir:	
366	Though it please you to think me hard and cruel, I hope I shall persuade you otherwise.	
368	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I have made myself a fine fool.	366: Elder realizes his plan has backfired.
370		
372	<i>Re-enter Welford.</i>	
374	Wel. Would you have spoke with me, madam?	
376	Lady. Yes, Master Welford; and I ask your pardon, Before this gentleman, for being <u>froward</u> : This kiss, and henceforth more affection.	= contrary or obstinate, ² ie. when she was so rude to him before.
378		
380	<i>[Kisses Welford.]</i>	
382	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] So; it <u>is better</u> I were drowned indeed.	= would have been better.
384	Wel. [<i>Aside</i>] This is a sudden passiön; God hold it! This fellow, out of his fear, sure, has Persuaded her: I'll give him a new suit on't.	383-5: Welford seems to think Elder has, out of his fear of Welford, convinced Lady - either intentionally or not - to turn her affection to him, and he will reward Elder by buying him new clothes!
386	Lady. A parting kiss; and, good sir, let me pray you To wait me in the <u>gallery</u> .	= hallway. ¹
388		
390	<i>[Kisses Welford again.]</i>	
392	Wel. [<i>Aside</i>] I am In another world! – Madam, where you please.	
394		
396	<i>[Exit.]</i>	
398	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>] I will <u>to</u> sea. And 't shall go hard but I'll be drowned <u>indeed</u> .	= ie. go to. = ie. for real.
400	Lady. Now, sir, you see I am no such hard creature But time may win me.	
402	Elder. You have forgot your lost love?	
404	Lady. Alas, sir, what would you have me do? I cannot call him back again with sorrow: I'll love this man as dearly; and, <u>besorrow me</u> , I'll keep him far enough from sea. And 'twas told <u>me</u> ,	= "beshrew me", ie. "the devil take me", or the like. = "to me".
408		
410	Now <u>I remember me</u> , by an old <u>wise woman</u> , That my first love should be drowned; and see, 'tis come about.	409: I remember me = "I remember": this is an example of the grammatical form known as the ethical dative; the me after the verb indicates extra interest on the part of the speaker. wise woman = witch or sorceress. ¹
412	Elder. [<i>Aside</i>]	

466 **Wel.** Come, come, you cannot hide it.
468 **Lady.** Indeed I can, where you shall never find it.
470 **Wel.** I like this mirth well, lady.
472 **Lady.** You shall have more on 't.
474 **Wel.** I must kiss you.
476 **Lady.** No, sir.
478 **Wel.** Indeed, I must.
480 **Lady.** What must be, must be.
482 [He kisses her.]
484 I will take my leave:
484 You have your parting blow. I pray, commend me
486 To those few friends you have, that sent you hither,
486 And tell them, when you travel next, 'twere fit
488 You brought less bravery with you and more wit;
488 You'll never get a wife else.
490 **Wel.** Are you in earnest?
492 **Lady.** Yes, faith. Will you eat, sir? your horses will be
494 ready straight: you shall have a napkin laid in the
494 buttery for you.
496 **Wel.** Do not you love me, then?
498 **Lady.** Yes, for that face.
500 **Wel.** It is a good one, lady.
502 **Lady.** Yes, if it were not warpt; the fire in time may
504 mend it.
506 **Wel.** Methinks, yours is none of the best, lady.
508 **Lady.** No, by my troth, sir; yet o' my conscience, you
510 could make shift with it.
512 **Wel.** Come, pray, no more of this.
514 **Lady.** I will not: fare you well. – Ho! who's within
514 there? Bring out the gentleman's horses; he's in haste;
516 and set some cold meat on the table.
518 **Wel.** I have too much of that, I thank you, lady:
Take your chamber when you please, there goes
518 A black one with you, lady.

= to here.

= ie. "it would be better for you".

= fine clothing.

492-4: at least Lady will feed Welford before sending him on his way.

= store room, where provisions were kept.²

502-3: Bond explains that *face* was used to describe the wooden façade of a house. Lady expects a fire would improve it!

505: oh dear! Petulant, Welford unchivalrously returns the insult.

= make do.

512-3: *Ho...within there* = Lady calls offstage for a servant.

= Welford alludes to the cold treatment he is receiving.

517: *Take your chamber* = "go back to your bedroom".

517-8: *there goes...with you* = an obscure line, but the sense may be that even as Lady returns to her chamber alone, she is really two people, herself and a villainess (*A black one*). This line is cited in a footnote in an 1813 edition

520	Lady. Farewell, young man.	of <i>Othello</i> , to support this interpretation of a similar line in that play, " <i>You that way, and you this, but two in company.</i> "
522	[Exit.]	
524	Wel. You have <u>made me one</u> . Farewell; and may the	= Welford puns on <i>young man</i> , which also means a dupe or fool, ³ or that she has left him "inexperienced". ¹
526	curse of a great house fall upon thee, – I mean, the <u>butler</u> ! The devil and all his works are in these women.	526: Welford may be recalling Roger's comparison of the butler to the devil, back in Act II.i.71.
	Would all of <u>my sex</u> were of my mind! I would make	527-9: ie. Welford would require all men (<i>my sex</i>) to refrain from sex, as if they had given it up for an extended period of Lent, to wean them off their dependence on women.
528	'em a new Lent, and a long one, that flesh might be in more reverence with them.	528-9: <i>be in reverence</i> = held in awe, as something not to be trifled with.
530		
	<i>Re-enter Abigail.</i>	
532	Abig. I am sorry, Master Welford –	
534	Wel. So am I, that you are here.	
536	Abig. How does my lady <u>use</u> you?	= treat.
538	Wel. As I would use you, scurvily.	
540	Abig. I <u>should</u> have been more kind, sir.	= would.
542	Wel. I should have been <u>undone</u> then. Pray, leave me,	= ruined.
544	And look to your <u>sweet-meats</u> . Hark, your lady calls.	= candied fruit or sugary cakes; ¹ Welford is telling Abigail to get back to her duties - or her snacking.
546	Abig. Sir, I shall borrow so much time, without offending.	546: ie. "I can wait a bit, Lady won't mind."
548	Wel. You're nothing but offence; for God's love, leave me.	
550	Abig. 'Tis strange, my lady should be such a tyrant.	
552	Wel. To send you to me. Pray, <u>go stitch</u> ; good, do:	= "get back to your embroidering", a typical activity for women to pass the time.
	You are more trouble to me than a <u>term</u> .	= one of the four periods of the year when the law courts were in session. ¹
554	Abig. I do not know how my good will, – if I said love,	
556	I lied not, – should any way deserve this.	
558	Wel. A thousand ways, a thousand ways. Sweet creature, Let me depart in peace.	
560	Abig. What creature, sir? I hope I am a woman.	
562	Wel. <u>A hundred</u> , I think, by your noise.	= ie. "you are a hundred creatures".
564	Abig. Since you are angry, sir, I am bold to tell you that	
566	I am a woman, and a <u>rib</u> –	= Abigail begins a reference to the notion that woman is formed from a man's rib.

568	Wel. Of a roasted horse.	= the obscure phrase, <i>tale of a roasted horse</i> , seems to refer to an improbable or tedious tale; ¹ Welford's point, in finishing Abigail's sentence, may simply be to let Abigail know he finds her presence and conversation tiresome.
570	Abig. <u>Conster</u> me that.	= explain (the word is related to <i>construe</i>).
572	Wel. <u>A dog can do it better</u> . Farewell, <u>Countess</u> ; and	572: <i>A dog...better</i> = Welford vaguely alludes to the practice of feeding horse-meat to dogs. ³
574	commend me to your lady; tell her she's proud and scurvy: and so I commit you both to <u>your tempter</u> .	<i>Countess</i> = (1) <i>Countess</i> is identified as a common name for a hound in a 1721 publication, <i>The Gentleman's Recreation</i> ; (2) the first syllable of <i>Countess</i> would have sounded the same as the rude word for a woman's private parts; the use of the word is intentional.
576	Abig. Sweet Master Welford!	= ie. the devil.
578	Wel. <u>Avoid</u> , old <u>Satanas</u> ! Go <u>daub your ruins</u> ;	578: <i>Avoid</i> = away!
580	Your face looks fouler than a storm: The footman <u>stays</u> you in the <u>lobby</u> , lady.	<i>Satanus</i> = ancient name for Satan. ¹ <i>daub your ruins</i> = a contractor's metaphor: "plaster (<i>daub</i>) ¹ your fallen or decayed building", meaning to cover over her face. Welford's cruelty would have been appreciated as quite funny by the Elizabethan audience.
582	Abig. If you were a gentleman, I <u>should</u> know it by your <u>gentle conditions</u> . Are these fit words to give a	580: Welford is being rudely suggestive.
584	gentlewoman?	<i>stays</i> = waits for.
586	Wel. As fit as they were made for you. – <u>Sirrah</u> , my horses! – Farewell, <u>old adage</u> !	<i>lobby</i> = hallway or anteroom.
588	Keep your nose warm; the <u>rheum</u> will <u>make it</u> horn else.	= would.
590	[Exit Welford.]	= noble qualities or habits. ^{2,4}
592	Abig. The blessings of a prodigal young heir be thy	587: <i>Sirrah</i> = address form used for servants.
594	companions, Welford! <u>Marry come up</u> , my gentleman, are your gums grown so tender they cannot bite? <u>A skittish filly</u> will be your fortune, Welford, and fair	<i>old adage</i> = Martha has earlier called Abigail <i>Old sayings</i> .
		= moisture in the air. ¹ = turn it to.
		592-3: <i>The blessings...companions</i> = Abigail wishes on Welford a son who will spend all his wealth.
		= an expression of surprise or contempt. ¹
		595-7: Abigail develops a plan: although it is unclear exactly what she means, Bond suggests that she has decided to play match-maker between Martha and Welford, expecting she would be a poor match for him. Note that Abigail uses an extended horse metaphor to unflatteringly describe Martha.
		<i>A skittish filly</i> = Abigail describes Welford's prospective mate as a weak or nervous woman, as opposed to a strong female like herself; <i>filly</i> describes a lively young girl as well as a horse. ¹
		595-6: <i>fair enough...pack-saddle</i> = attractive enough to be a pack-animal or bear a burden; a <i>pack-saddle</i> was a saddle capable of being loaded. ¹

596 enough for such a pack-saddle: and I doubt not,
598 if my aim hold, to see her made to amble to your hand.

[Exit.]

ACT III, SCENE II.

A Room in the House of Elder Loveless.

*Enter Young Loveless, Captain, Poet,
Morecraft, Widow, and Savil.*

1 **Capt.** Save thy brave shoulder, my young puissant knight!

2 And may thy back-sword bite them to the bone
That love thee not! Thou art an errant man;

4 Go on; the circumcised shall fall by thee:

Let land and labour fill the man that tills;

6 Thy sword must be thy plough; and Jove it speed!

8 Mecca shall sweat, and Máhomet shall fall,
And thy dear name fill up his monument.

10 **Young.** It shall, Captain; I mean to be a worthy.

597: *if my aim hold* = "if my plan works out".

amble to your hand = like a horse approaching its owner; Abigail's equine imagery is not flattering to Martha.

Entering Characters: the money-lender **Morecraft** arrives at the Loveless home to arrange the purchase of the Loveless estates. Note that **Widow** has decided to tag along as well - though her presence doesn't really make sense; perhaps she is interested to see Young Loveless once again.

1: *Save thy brave shoulder* = humorous greeting, similar to "God save you".

puissant = mighty or powerful.²

knight = Young has successfully acquired a knight-hood.

= a sword with only one sharp edge.¹

= who. = ie. a knight-errant.

= ie. Muslims; the Captain alludes to the still familiar image of the Christian knights of the west fighting their enemies, the Turks of the Ottoman Empire; the Ottomans were very much still viewed as an existential threat to Europe at this time, as they had besieged Vienna in 1529, and would do so again in 1683.

5-6: the Captain draws a contrast between those who farm, and are fulfilled (*filled*) by working the land, and Young, from whom great martial adventures are expected.

Note both the alliteration and rhyme of line 5; the Captain has a penchant for using alliterative expressions.

6: *Thy sword...plough* = the Captain reverses the Bible's admonition to turn one's "swords to ploughshares".

Jove it speed = "God grant you success (*speed*)"; the name of the Roman king of the gods was often used to mean the Christian God. Note the poetical construction of this brief sentence, in which the object *it* is placed before the verb *speed*, to fit the meter.

= Muhammad, meaning Islam in general.¹

= ie. Muhammad's tomb.

= Young intends to deserve to be included among the oft referred-to *nine worthies*, a collection of nine heroes from the past whose lives were worthy of admiration; they included

(a) 3 pagans: Hector of Troy, Alexander the Great and Julius Caesar;

(b) 3 Jews: Joshua, David and Judas Maccabeus; and

(c) 3 Christians: King Arthur, Charlemagne, and Godfrey

28	I should prepare her for you.	
30	Capt. Or <u>provoke her</u> . – Speak, my <u>modern</u> man; I say, provoke her.	= ie. rouse or cause her to love Morecraft. ¹ = ordinary; ³ the Captain addresses the Poet in this line.
32		
34	Poet. Captain, I say so too; or stir her to it: So say the <u>critics</u> .	= ie. those who are skilled in textual interpretation. ¹
36	Young. But howsoever you <u>expound</u> it, sir, She's very welcome; and this shall serve for witness. –	= interpret. ¹
38		
	[<i>Kisses Widow.</i>]	39: as described previously, strangers often greeted each other with a kiss on the lips.
40		
42	And, widow, since <u>you're come so happily</u> , You shall <u>deliver up the keys</u> , and free Possession of this house, whilst I stand by To ratify.	= "your arrival is so fortuitous". = ie. to Morecraft, to conclude the sale of the property.
44		
46	Wid. I had rather give it back again, believe me; 'Tis a misery to say, you had it. Take heed.	46-47: Widow wisely advises Young to reconsider selling his lands. 47: "it will bring you despair to have to say in the future, 'I owned property'; be cautious!"
48		
50	Young. 'Tis past that, widow. Come, sit down. – Some wine there! – <u>There is a scurvy banquet</u> , if we had it. – [<i>To Morecraft.</i>] All this fair house is yours, sir. – Savil!	= "it's too late for that". = "there would also be a wretched course of dessert". ²
52		
54	Sav. Yes, sir.	
56	Young. Are <u>your keys</u> ready? I must ease your burden.	= the steward wore a chain with keys on them as a symbol of his office; ⁵ Savil is being relieved of his position.
58	Sav. I am ready, sir, to be <u>undone</u> , when you Shall call me to 't.	= ruined.
60	Young. Come, come, thou shalt live better.	60: ie. by entering a state of endless carousal with the boys.
62	Sav. [<i>Aside</i>] I shall have less to do, that's all: There's half-a-dozen of my friends i' the fields, Sunning against a <u>bank</u> , with half a <u>breech</u>	63-65: Savil expects to join his friends in their poverty. 64: bank = ie. of a river; breech = an undergarment reaching down to cover a portion of the thighs. ¹
64		
66	Among 'em; I shall be with 'em shortly. – The care and continual vexation Of being rich, eat up <u>this rascal!</u> What shall become of my poor family? They are no sheep, and they must keep themselves.	= ie. Morecraft. 69: ie. unlike sheep, his family will have no one else to look after them, so they will have to fend for themselves.
68		
70	Young. Drink, Master Morecraft. Pray, be merry all. Nay, <u>an</u> you will not drink, there's no <u>society</u> . Captain, speak loud, and drink. – Widow, a word.	= if. = (true) fellowship. ¹
72		
74		
	[<i>Retires with Widow.</i>]	75: Young steps aside with Widow.
76	Capt. Expound her <u>thoroughly</u> , knight. –	= thoroughly.

78	Here, god o' gold, here's to thy fair possessions!	78: the Captain drinks a toast to Morecraft, and refers to him as the <i>god of gold</i> , alluding to Plutus, the Greek god of wealth; in this speech the Captain encourages the usurer to be more generous, especially to him!
	Be a baron, and a bold one;	79: note the nice alliteration in this line.
80	Leave off your tickling of young heirs like trouts,	= it was believed that one could catch a trout by tickling it in the gills; ⁵ the meaning here is that Morecraft should leave the sinful life of snaring the property away from the heirs of wealthy men, who were often considered likely to waste away the wealth passed on by their fathers.
	And let thy chimneys smoke; feed men of war;	81: "have a smoke, and lend a soldier (meaning himself) some money."
82	Live, and be honest, and <u>be savèd yet</u> .	= ie. save his soul by rejecting his sinful occupation.
84	<i>More.</i> I thank you, worthy Captain, for your counsel,	84f: Morecraft responds sarcastically to the Captain.
86	You keep your chimneys smoking there, your nostrils;	
86	And, when you can, you feed a man of war:	
88	This makes you not a baron, but a bare one;	87: note the wordplay of <i>baron</i> and <i>bare one</i> .
88	And how or when you shall be savèd, let	
90	The <u>clerk of the company</u> you have commanded	89-90: Morecraft mocks: he suggests letting the chaplain (<i>clerk</i>) of the company that the Captain commands (perhaps only his imagination) take responsibility for saving his soul. ³
90	Have a just care of.	= ie. moved to anger; after the dash, the Poet addresses the money-lender.
92	<i>Poet.</i> The man is much <u>moved</u> . – Be not angry, sir;	
	But, as the poet sings, let your displeasure	93-94: <i>as the poet...go out</i> = the Poet cites the 1st century B.C. Roman poet Horace, ³ who wrote in his <i>Epistles</i> , Book I, Epistle 2, line 62, "anger is a brief madness". ¹⁷
94	Be a short fury, and <u>go out</u> . You have spoke home,	<i>go out</i> = expire, like a flame.
	And bitterly to <u>him</u> , sir. – Captain, take truce;	= originally <i>me</i> ; I follow Dyce and Bond's emendation to <i>him</i> .
96	The <u>miser</u> is a <u>tart</u> and a witty <u>whoreson</u> .	= derisive term for usurers. = sour or biting. ¹ = bastard.
98	<i>Capt.</i> Poet, <u>you feign</u> , <u>perdie</u> : the wit of this man	98: <i>you feign</i> = "you lie", or "you don't mean that";
	Lies in his fingers' ends; he must <u>tell</u> all;	<i>perdie</i> = "by God" (from the French <i>par Dieu</i>), ie. "truly". ^{1,4}
	His tongue fills but his mouth like a <u>neat's</u> tongue,	= "count", alluding to Morecraft's presumed penchant for counting his money, which is why his intelligence lies in his fingertips.
100	And only serves to lick his <u>hungry chaps</u>	100: Morecraft "can make no more use of his tongue than an ox (<i>neat</i>)" (Bond, p., 419), ie. he has no ability to speak wittily.
	<u>After a purchase</u> : his brains and <u>brimstone</u> are	= ie. greedy jaws. ²
102	The devil's <u>diet</u> to a fat usurer's head. –	102: <i>after a purchase</i> = ie. whenever he adds to his wealth.
	To her, knight, to her! <u>clap her aboard</u> , and <u>stow her</u> . –	102-3: <i>his brains...head</i> = Bond interprets this difficult line to mean that Morecraft's <i>brains</i> serve only as a side-dish for when the devil comes to eat off of his head; ³ a very early editor interprets <i>diet</i> to mean "sauce". ⁴
		<i>brimstone</i> = burning sulfur, a means used to punish the soul in hell. ¹
		104: <i>clap her aboard</i> = switching to a maritime metaphor,

<p>Where's the brave steward?</p> <p>106</p> <p>108 <i>Sav.</i> Here's your poor friend and Savil, sir.</p> <p>110 <i>Capt.</i> Away, thou art rich in ornaments of nature: First, in thy face; thou hast a serious face, 112 A betting, bargaining, and saving face, A rich face, – pawn it to the usurer, – A face to <u>kindle</u> the compassiön</p> <p>114 Of the most ignorant and <u>frozen</u> justice.</p> <p>116 <i>Sav.</i> Tis such, I dare not show it shortly, sir.</p> <p>118 <i>Capt.</i> Be <u>blithe and bonny</u>, steward. – Master Morecraft, 120 Drink to this <u>man of reckoning</u>.</p> <p>122 <i>More.</i> [<i>Drinks.</i>] Here's e'en to him.</p> <p>124 <i>Sav.</i> [<i>Aside</i>] The devil guide it downward! <u>would</u> there were <u>in 't</u></p> <p>126 An acre of the great <u>broom-field</u> he bought, To <u>sweep</u> your dirty conscience, or to choke you!</p> <p>128 Tis all <u>one</u> to me, usurer.</p> <p>130 <i>Young.</i> [<i>to Widow</i>] Consider what I told you; you are young, 132 <u>Unapt</u> for worldly business. Is it fit, One of such tenderness, so delicate, 134 <u>So contrary to things of care</u>, should stir, And break her better meditatiöns,</p> <p>In the bare <u>brokage</u> of a <u>brace of angels</u>?</p> <p>136 <u>Or a new kirtle</u>, though it be of satin? Eat by the <u>hope</u> of forfeits and lie down</p> <p>138 Only in expectation of a <u>morrow</u>, That may <u>undo</u> some easy-hearted fool,</p>	<p>the Captain suggests Young board the Widow, like a ship. We may note that the Captain, who earlier had offered to help Morecraft win the Widow, now encourages Young to take her for himself. <i>stow her</i> = confine her under the hatches.¹</p> <p>= to incite or stir up, but also used in metaphor with frozen in the next line. = ie. it cannot be moved to sympathy.</p> <p>116: ie. for shame in his poverty = merry and pleasing.^{1,2} = an easy pun on Savil's status as steward, who kept the household accounts; the Captain keeps Morecraft occupied with drinking, allowing Young time to court Widow.</p> <p>= "I wish". = in it, ie. in Morecraft's drink.</p> <p>125-6: Savil wishes there were an acre of the Loveless land in Morecraft's drink, to either excite his conscience or choke him. broom-field = derisive term for land. broom = a plant with a yellow flower found in abundance in England.¹ sweep = Savil puns on broom.</p> <p>= ie. the same.</p> <p>130f: in this speech, Young tries to persuade Widow of the reasons she should not marry Morecraft the usurer. = unsuited.²</p> <p>= ie. not made to have to worry. 134-5: note the extended alliteration in these two lines.</p> <p>135: colloquially, "in order to make an extra buck?" brokage = engaging in commercial transactions.¹ brace of angels = pair of angels (coins).</p> <p>= ie. just to be able to buy a new gown (kirtle).</p> <p>137: eat...forfeits = to be able to eat thanks only to the expectation (hope) of borrowers forfeiting their property to Morecraft.</p> <p>= ie. new day. = ruin; Young relentlessly drives home the unsavouriness of the means by which Widow, in marrying the usurer,</p>
--	--

140 Or reach a widow's curses? let out money,
 Whose use returns the principal? and get,
 142 Out of these troubles, a consuming heir;

For such a one must follow necessarily?
 144 You shall die hated, if not old and miserable;
 And that possessed wealth, that you got with pining,
 146 Live to see tumbled to another's hands,

That is no more a-kin to you than you
 148 To his cozenage.

Wid. Sir, you speak well: would God, that charity
 Had first begun here!

152
Young. 'Tis yet time. – Be merry!
 154 Methinks, you want wine there; there's more i' the house. –

Captain, where rests the health?

156
Capt. It shall go round, boy.

158
Young. [To Widow]
 160 Say, you can suffer this, because the end

Points at much profit, – can you so far bow
 162 Below your blood, below your too-much beauty,

To be a partner of this fellow's bed,
 164 And lie with his diseases? If you can,

I will not press you further. Yet look upon him:
 166 There's nothing in that hide-bound usurer,

That man of mat, that all-decayed, but aches,
 168 For you to love, unless his perished lungs,
 His dry cough, or his scurvy; this is truth.
 170 And so far I dare speak it: he has yet,
 Past cure of physic, spaw, or any diet,

would be getting money to live an easy life.

= lend.
 141-2: **and get...heir** = "your only reward for all your pains will be a son who will no doubt wastefully consume all you have worked for."

= causing suffering in others.¹
 146: "you will live to see your wealth passed on to others (thanks to your son's predicted prodigality)."

= who. = in familial relation.
 = deception; but with **a-kin**, also punning on "cousinage", meaning kinship.

150-1: Widow clearly alludes to the phrase **charity begins at home**; the expression found its modern form in John Marston's play *Histrion-mastix*, first published in 1610, "True charity beginneth first at home."

= "there's time for that!"
 = lack or need; Young is addressing Morecraft, continuing to keep him busy with drinking.
 = he refers to a drink that is being passed around.

160-1: **Say...profit** = "let's suppose you could tolerate being married to Morecraft, because of the wealth you will have in compensation".
end = result.

161-2: **bow below your blood** = "consent to marry one of Morecraft's rank (**blood**), which is so far below yours."
 Note also the impressive alliteration from **bow** to **beauty**.

= Young's next line of argument is to suggest Morecraft is suffering from a variety of wasting - and loathsome - ailments.

= "miserly", but also meaning "emaciated", so that his skin clings to his bones;¹ in this and the next line, Young refers repeatedly to Morecraft's spindly physical condition, wasted away by presumed disease.

= man of straw, ie. without substance.

171: **physic** = medicine.
spaw = generic reference to a **spa**, derived from **the Spaw**, a Belgian town 16 miles south of Liège, famous for its mineral springs, which were popular with invalids attracted to their curative powers.²⁹

172	A <u>primitive pox in his bones</u> ; and, o' my knowledge, He has been ten times <u>rowelled</u> ; – you may love him; –	= ie. early stages of venereal disease, which was said to cause pain in the bones. = a term from veterinary medicine, in which a small wheel of leather was inserted into an incision to encourage fluid discharge. ^{1,3}
174	He had a bastard, his own <u>toward issue</u> , Whipped and then <u>cropped</u> ,	= promising son. ¹ 175: piling on, Young suggests Morecraft's illegitimate son is also a criminal. The <i>cropping</i> of the ears was an occasional punishment in the 16th and 17th centuries.
176	For washing out the roses in three farthings, To make 'em pence.	176-7: the suggestion is that his son filed away the roses engraved on 3-farthing coins so that they would be taken for 1-penny coins, which had a higher value; ³ however, Bond points out that there was no three-farthing coin with a rose on it, though James I had recently introduced a gold coin, the Rose Rial, with a rose on the reverse. The obverse of the coin features a spectacularly detailed image of James on his throne. ¹⁸
178	Wid. I do not like <u>these morals</u> .	= ie. Morecraft's morals - or maybe Young's moralizing. ¹
180	Young. You must not like him, then.	
182	<i>Enter Elder Loveless.</i>	
184	Elder. By your leave, gentlemen.	
186	Young. By my troth, sir, you are welcome; welcome, faith.	187: Young does not seem particularly surprised to see his brother!
188	Lord, what a stranger you are grown! Pray, <u>know</u>	= meet, be introduced to.
190	This gentlewoman; and, if you please, these friends here. We are merry; you see the worst <u>on's</u> ;	= on us.
192	Your house has been kept warm, sir.	
194	Elder. I am glad To hear it, brother; pray God, <u>you are wise too!</u>	= Elder alludes to another of Heywood's proverbs: "ye are wise enough, if ye keepe ye warme."
196	Young. Pray, Master Morecraft, know my elder brother; –	= "formally greet my brother".
198	And, Captain, <u>do your compliment</u> . – Savil, I dare swear, is glad at heart to see you.	
200	Lord, we heard, sir, you were drowned at sea, And see how luckily things come about!	
202	More. This money must be paid again, sir.	= since Elder is alive, Morecraft's purchase of the property from Young was without effect; so he asks Young for his money back.
204	Young. No, sir; Pray, keep the <u>sale</u> ; 'twill make good tailors' measures:	= deed of sale, ³ now a worthless piece of paper.
206	I am well, I thank you.	
208	Wid. [<i>Aside</i>] By my troth, <u>the gentleman</u>	208-9: Widow is impressed by Young (<i>the gentleman</i>) finally showing some ability to make money, and not just spend it; of course, the legality and morality of his profit are somewhat dubious. Unfortunately, part of the humour, as well as the audience's expected easy acceptance of Young's defrauding Morecraft, is the fact that money-lenders such as
210	Has stewed him in his own sauce; I shall love him for 't.	

212 **Sav.** I know not where I am, I am so glad!
 Your worship is the welcom'st man alive:
 Upon my knees I bid you welcome home.
 214 Here has been such a hurry, such a din,
 Such dismal drinking, swearing, and whoring,
 216 'T has almost made me mad:
 We have all lived in a continual Turnball-street.
 218 Sir, blest be Heaven, that sent you safe again!
 Now shall I eat, and go to bed again.
 220
 222 **Elder.** Brother, dismiss these people.
 222
 224 **Young.** Captain, be gone a while;
 Meet me at my old rendezvous in the evening;
 Take your small poet with you.
 226
 [Exeunt Captain and Poet.]
 228
 Master Morecraft,
 230 You were best go prattle with your learnèd counsel;
 I shall preserve your money: I was cozened
 232
 When time was; we are quit, sir.
 234 **Wid.** [Aside] Better and better still.
 236 **Elder.** What is this fellow, brother?
 238 **Young.** The thirsty usurer that supped my land off.
 240 **Elder.** What does he tarry for?
 242 **Young.** Sir, to be landlord of your house and state:
 I was bold to make a little sale, sir.
 244
 246 **More.** Am I over-reached? If there be law, I'll hamper ye.
 248
Elder. Prithee, be gone, and rail at home; thou art
 So base a fool, I cannot laugh at thee.
Sirrah, this comes of cozening: home, and spare;
 250 Eat raddish till you raise your sums again.
 If you stir far in this, I'll have you whipped,
 252 Your ears nailed for intelligencing o' the pillory,

Morecraft were invariably Jewish, and hence not liable to receive much sympathy.

= originally *Turnmill Street*, located in central London; Sugden writes "it was the most disreputable street in London, a haunt of thieves and loose women."²⁹

= thin.²

230: "it would be best for you to go talk to your lawyer."
 231: *preserve* = keep.
cozened = cheated, ie. by being paid much less than the house was worth.
 = all even.

= who.

= "is he waiting".

245: *over-reached* = outwitted.²
I'll hamper ye = the sense is Morecraft will use the law to obstruct the Loveless' free enjoyment of the property.¹

= Elder uses the contemptuous *thou* to address Morecraft.

249: *Sirrah* = an address form used to express contempt.
cozening = cheating.
home, and spare = "go home and live frugally."

= money, wealth.
 = ie. pursue this matter any further.

252: *ears nailed o' the pillory* = there was a form of punishment in which a prisoner was secured in a kind of stocks attached to a post, and an ear nailed to the post, with the expectation that the ear would be torn off when the prisoner invariably moved his head;
intelligencing = telling tales, slandering;¹ the earliest case of criminal prosecution in England (as opposed to suits for

<p>And <u>your goods forfeit</u>. You are a <u>stale</u> cozener:</p>	<p>civil damages) appears to have taken place around this time, during the reign of James I.¹⁰</p> <p>253: <i>your goods forfeit</i> = if convicted he would lose all his property. <i>stale</i> = ie. he has lost his novelty, though there also could be a sense of "being stalemated".¹</p>
<p>254 Leave my house. No more!</p>	
<p>256 <i>More.</i> A pox upon your house! –</p>	<p>256: the quintessential Elizabethan imprecation; the earliest use of <i>pox</i> in this manner occurred in Robert Greene's play <i>Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay</i>, published in 1594. = gambler.</p>
<p>258 Come, widow; I shall yet hamper this young <u>gamester</u>.</p>	
<p><i>Wid.</i> Good <u>twelve i' the hundred</u>, keep your way;</p>	<p>= a vocative expression, alluding to the extortionate but hypothetical 12% interest a usurer might earn on a loan; a 1571 statute limited the interest rate to 10%,¹⁹ and a later statute passed in 1623 limited it to 8%.¹⁰</p>
<p>260 I am not for your diet: Marry in your own tribe, Jew, and get a <u>broker</u>.</p>	<p>= a marriage match-maker.¹</p>
<p>262 <i>Young.</i> 'Tis well said, widow. – Will you jog on, sir?</p>	
<p>264 <i>More.</i> Yes, I will go; but 'tis no matter <u>whither</u>: 266 But <u>when I</u> trust a wild fool, and a woman, 268 May I lend <u>gratis</u>, and <u>build hospitals</u>!</p>	<p>= to where. = "should I ever again". 267: <i>gratis</i> = ie. interest-free.</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">[<i>Exit Morecraft.</i>]</p>	<p><i>build hospitals</i> = a well-known civic gesture by the wealthy was to sponsor the building of a new hospital; this is not something a stereotypical usurer would do.</p>
<p>270 <i>Young.</i> Nay, good sir, make all even: 272 Here is a widow wants your good word for me; 274 She's rich, and may renew me and my fortunes.</p>	<p>271-3: Young asks his brother to put in a good word for him with the Widow.</p>
<p>276 <i>Elder.</i> I am glad you look <u>before</u> you. – Gentlewoman, Here is a poor <u>distressèd</u> younger brother.</p>	<p>= in front of. = vexed by problems.²</p>
<p>278 <i>Wid.</i> You do him wrong, sir; he's a knight.</p>	
<p>280 <i>Elder.</i> <u>I ask you mercy</u>: yet, 'tis no matter; <u>His knighthood is no inheritance</u>, I take it: 282 Whatsoever he is, he's your <u>servant</u>, or would be, lady. Faith, be not merciless, but make a man: 284 He's young and handsome, though he be my brother, And his <u>observances</u> may deserve your love; 286 He shall not fail for means.</p>	<p>= "pardon me." = ie. a man cannot live on his title alone. = courter or wooer. = attentiveness.²</p>
<p>288 <i>Wid.</i> Sir, you speak like a worthy brother: And so much I do credit your fair language, 290 That I shall love your brother; and so love him – But I shall blush to say more.</p>	<p>285: Elder will ensure Young will not <i>fail</i> to pull his own financial weight in a marriage.</p> <p>290: for the second time in the play, Widow is embarrassed to continue her speech.</p>
<p>292 <i>Elder.</i> Stop her mouth. – 294 [<i>Young Loveless kisses her.</i>]</p>	<p>293: "kiss her already!"</p>

<p>296 I hope <u>you</u> shall not live to know that hour, 298 When this shall be repented. – Now, brother, I should chide; But I'll give no distaste to your fair mistress. 300 I will instruct her in 't, and she shall do 't: You have been wild and ignorant; pray, <u>mend it</u>. 302 304 Young. Sir, every day, now <u>spring comes on</u>.</p> <p>Elder. To you, good Master Savil, and your office, 306 Thus much I have to say. You're, from my steward, Become, first your own drunkard, then his bawd; 308 They say, you're excellent grown in both, and perfect: Give me your keys, Sir Savil. 310 312 Sav. Good sir, consider whom you left me to.</p> <p>Elder. I left you as a <u>curb</u> for, not to provoke, 314 My brother's follies. Where's the best drink, now? Come, tell me, Savil, <u>where's the soundest whores</u>?</p> <p>316 You old <u>he-goat</u>, you dried ape, you lame stallion, Must you be <u>leaping</u> in my house! your whores,</p> <p>318 Like fairies, dance their night-<u>rounds</u>, without fear Either of king or constable, within my walls? 320 Are all my <u>hangings</u> safe? my sheep unsold yet? I hope my <u>plate</u> is <u>current</u>; I ha' too much on 't. 322 What say you to three hundred pounds in drink now?</p> <p>324 Sav. Good sir, forgive me, and but hear me speak.</p> <p>326 Elder. Methinks, thou shouldst be drunk still, and not speak; 'Tis the more pardonable. 328 330 Sav. I will, sir, if you will have it so.</p> <p>332 Elder. I thank you: yes, e'en pursue it, sir. Do you hear? Get a whore soon for your recreation;</p>	<p>= ie. Widow; note how Elder has been addressing her with the respectful "you".</p> <p>= ie. "mend your ways."</p> <p>303: "sir, I will do so every day, now that spring has arrived"; spring here represents ground that has been left barren for the winter, but will be cultivated when the warmer weather returns - a metaphor for Young's renewed good fortune.³</p> <p>306-7: You're...bawd = "from my steward you have turned into a drunkard and a procurer of prostitutes."</p> <p>309: Elder, perhaps unfairly, dismisses Savil from his office; his keys are a symbol of the position of steward.</p> <p>= restraint.</p> <p>315: where's...whores = note the typical lack of concern for proper subject-verb agreement. soundest = healthiest, least affected by venereal disease.</p> <p>= goat was a common term of abuse used to describe a lecherous man.</p> <p>= ie. like a stallion. I have adopted the punctuation for lines 317-9 from Bond and Dyce, who also substituted leaping for the original word leading; but the lines as they appeared in the earliest editions are acceptable as well: "Must you be leading in my house your whores, Like fairies dance their night-rounds, without fear Either of king or constable, within my walls?"</p> <p>= dances performed in a circle, typically holding hands.</p> <p>= draperies or tapestries.¹</p> <p>320: plate = vessels made of gold and silver.¹ current = genuine; Elder's mock concern is that Savil has allowed Young to sell off the valuable possessions, and in the case of his dinner ware, replace them with cheaper ones, in order to raise funds to procure women.</p> <p>326-7: the offense of drunkenness on the part of Savil would be more forgivable than what he has actually done.</p>
---	--

Go look out Captain Broken-breech, your fellow,

334 And quarrel, if you dare. I shall deliver

336 These keys to one shall have more honesty,
 Though not so much fine wit, sir. You may walk,

And gather cresses, sir, to cool your liver;

338 There's something for you to begin a diet,
 You'll have the pox else. Speed you well, Sir Savil!

340 You may eat at my house to preserve life;
 But keep no fornications in the stables.

342 [Exeunt Elder and Young Loveless with the Widow.]

344 **Sav.** Now must I hang myself; my friends will look for't.
 346 Eating and sleeping, I do despise you both now:
 I will run mad first, and, if that get not pity,

348 I'll drown myself to a most dismal ditty.

350 [Exit.]

END OF ACT III.

333: **look out** = seek out.
Captain Broken-breech = "Captain Bankrupt-pants".
fellow = companion.
 = ie. "pick a fight with him".

= ie. "as clever as you are".

337: **gather cresses** = collect edible plants, like watercress, for consumption.
liver = frequently referred to organ which was believed to be the seat of emotions, especially sexual passion.

339: **have the pox** = catch venereal disease (if he doesn't cool off his lust).
Speed you well = "I wish you success".

340: at least Elder won't let Savil go hungry.
 = ie. women.

347: Savil suggests he may appear in public pretending to be mad, in order to elicit pity and alms; there are frequent allusions in the literature of the day to such faux-madmen, who were known as *Abraham-men*.

347-8: scenes sometimes end with a rhyming couplet.
 347-8: previous editors have noted a parody here of Shakespeare's Ophelia, from *Hamlet*, who after going mad, sang strange songs, and then drowned herself. ³

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

A Room in Lady's House.

Enter Abigail.

1 **Abig.** Alas, poor gentlewoman, to what a misery hath
2 age brought thee, to what a scurvy fortune! Thou, that
4 has been a companion for noblemen, and, at the worst
of those times, for gentlemen, now, like a broken

6 serving-man, must beg for favour to those, that would
have crawled, like pilgrims, to my chamber but for
an apparition of me.

8 You that be coming on, make much of fifteen,
And so till five-and-twenty: use your time

10 With reverence, that your profits may arise;

It will not tarry with you; ecce signum!

12 Here was a face!
But Time, that like a surfeit eats our youth,
14 (Plague of his iron teeth, and draw 'em for 't!)
Has been a little bolder here than welcome;

16 And now, to say the truth, I am fit for no man.
Old men i' the house, of fifty, call me grannam;

18 And when they are drunk, e'en then when Joan and my
lady
Are all one, not one will do me reason.

20 My little Levite hath forsaken me;

His silver sound of cittern quite abolished;

22 His doleful hymns under my chamber-window
Digested into tedious learning.

Entering Character: in her opening speech, Abigail recites the play's longest soliloquy, ruing her advancing years; once upon a time she was the lover of aristocrats, but her standards have been forced to drop gradually over the decades, with a concomitant increase in difficulty in procuring any lovers at all.

= Abigail addresses herself.

4: **gentlemen** = those well-born, but a step below nobility.
broken = ruined or bankrupt.²

= the sense is that seeing Abigail's bedroom once had the aura of visiting a holy site.

= a vision, typically said of a ghost or star.¹

8-11: Abigail, switching to verse, advises the young ladies of the audience to take advantage of their youth's beauty while they still have it.

8-9: **fifteen...till five-and-twenty** = presumably the ages between which a woman is most beautiful.

= suggestive, as is usual with Abigail.

11: **It will not tarry with you** = proverbial: "time and tide tarry for no man" (**It** refers to time); variations of this expression can be traced back to the 15th century.

ecce signum = Latin for "behold the proof";²¹ the pitiable Abigail points to her own face as she says this.

13: ie. personified **Time** feasts on **our youth**.³

14: "a plague on Time's iron teeth! pull them out for this!" - perhaps a reference to the beast with iron teeth seen by Daniel in Daniel 7:7.

= grandmother.¹

18-19: even when men are so drunk that all women should be equally attractive to them, none will have her.

Joan = generic name used to represent any female rustic.¹

Are all one = are all the same.

= slightly derisive term for a clergyman,¹ meaning Roger; her flirtations with Welford have caused Roger to break up with her.

21-23: Roger no longer serenades Abigail with music.
cittern = an early guitar.

= dissipated into,¹ ie. exchanged for.

<p>24</p> <p>26</p> <p>28</p> <p>30</p> <p>32</p> <p>34</p> <p>36</p> <p>38</p> <p>40</p> <p>42</p>	<p>Well, fool, you <u>leapt a haddock</u> when you left him:</p> <p>He's a clean man, and a good <u>edifier</u>, And <u>twenty nobles</u> is his <u>state de claro</u>,</p> <p>Besides his <u>pigs in posse</u>.</p> <p>To this good homilist I have been ever stubborn, Which God forgive me for, and mend my manners! And, Love, if ever thou hadst care of <u>forty</u>,</p> <p>Of such a <u>piece of lay ground</u>, hear my prayer,</p> <p>And fire his <u>zeal</u> so far forth, that my faults, In this renewed impression of my love, May shew <u>corrected</u> to our <u>gentle reader</u>!</p> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Enter Roger.</i></p> <p>[<i>Aside</i>] See how neglectingly he passes by me! With what an equipage canonical,</p> <p>As though he had <u>broke the heart</u> of <u>Bellarmin</u>,</p> <p>Or added something to the singing brethren! Tis scorn, I know it, and deserve it. – Master Roger –</p>	<p>= "let slip an opportunity";³ Abigail has replaced the original fish used in the phrase, a whiting, with what she considers a superior fish.³</p> <p>= ie. a saver or supporter of souls.¹</p> <p>26: Roger's net income (<i>state de claro</i>) from private sources is <i>twenty nobles</i>, a noble being worth 6 shillings, 8 pence.³</p> <p>= potential (<i>in posse</i>)³ income in tithe-pigs; if Roger had his own parish, he might receive additional income in the form of animals donated by farmers to satisfy their tithing requirement.</p> <p>28: ie. she should have married him when he her wanted to.</p> <p>30-31: Abigail asks personified Love to help her. <i>forty</i> = ie. forty years of age; not to be taken literally, as <i>forty</i> was used to mean "an indefinite but large number".¹</p> <p>31: Abigail refers to herself, in this bawdy metaphor, as an uncultivated or unploughed piece of land; the original edition prints <i>lape</i>, without doubt an error for <i>laye (lay)</i>. = <i>zeal</i> usually refers to religious passion.</p> <p>34: <i>corrected</i> = mended. <i>gentle reader</i> = a <i>reader</i>, here meaning Roger, was a minor office in post-Reformation England, applied to one who led church services;¹ Abigail also plays on the phrase <i>gentle reader</i>, which is usually used as an address of courtesy by an author to the readers of his or her work.</p> <p>36: Roger enters the stage and walks by Abigail, deliberately ignoring her.</p> <p>39: Roger may be dressed in his full ecclesiastical garb, or perhaps Abigail refers to his religious bearing.</p> <p>40: <i>broke the heart</i> = the still common expression, "to break a person's heart", for bringing crushing sorrow on another, dates back to at least 1530. <i>Robert Bellarmine</i> (1542-1621), Archbishop of Capua, and an important figure in the Catholic church hierarchy in his day; in 1606, the year after the Gunpowder Plot, in which a conspiracy of Catholics planning to blow up Parliament was discovered, Parliament promulgated an oath which required Catholics to swear primary allegiance to James I over the pope and their church. Bellarmine was one of those involved in the back and forth of controversy regarding the oath, and wrote a treatise attacking it. Weber observes that it was believed to have added to one's prestige to have participated in the debate against the outsider. Thus, Abigail suggests that Roger, as a good Protestant, would have taken sides against the archbishop.⁸</p> <p>= ie. written a hymn to be used by the despised Puritans.³</p>
---	---	--

44	Roger. Fair gentlewoman, my name is Roger.	44: Roger, with biting formality and self-conscious modestly, declines the title Master , which suggests he is of high social rank. ¹
46	Abig. Then, <u>gentle Roger</u> –	= an alternative polite form of address. ¹
48	Roger. <u>Ungentle</u> Abigail!	48: Roger's mask quickly slips: ungentle = unkind. ¹
50	Abig. Why, Master Roger, will you set your wit To a weak woman's?	50-51 we remember that Roger is known for enjoying a clever exchange of banter.
52	Roger. You are <u>weak</u> , indeed;	= lacking self-restraint. ¹
54	For so the poet sings.	54: an unclear reference, not illuminated by any of the early editors; the phrase the poet sings appears often in 17th century literature, and was used to refer to any of a number of ancient versifiers, including Homer, Ennius, and Juvenal. Juvenal's <i>Satire VI</i> was an invective against women, and included complaints about their lack of virtue and self-restraint.
56	Abig. I do confess My weakness, sweet Sir Roger.	
58	Roger. Good my lady's	59-61: even in this difficult moment of confrontation, Roger endearingly cannot help but play with words.
60	Gentlewoman, or my good lady's gentlewoman, (This <u>trope</u> is lost to you now,) leave your <u>prating</u> .	= figure of speech, ¹ ie. word-play. = pointless chatter. ¹
62	You have a season of your first mother in you: And, surely, had the devil been in love, He had been <u>abused</u> too. Go, <u>Dalida</u> ; You make men fools, and wear <u>fig-breeches</u> .	62: ie. Abigail has some of Eve's deceiving qualities in her. 63-64: had the devil...abused too = "you would have deceived (abused) the devil himself if he had been in love with you." = ie. Delilah, the woman who in the book of Judges betrayed Samson by letting the Philistines cut off his hair; her name was proverbial for a temptress. ¹ 65: fig-breeches = ie. loin-covering garments made of fig-leaves; the reference is to Adam and Eve covering up their nakedness by sewing together fig leaves; Roger's point is that Abigail has shamed Roger in the same way that Eve, by inciting Adam to taste the forbidden fruit, brought shame on the first man by revealing to Adam his nakedness. breeches = the ubiquitous article of clothing resembling short trousers; the improbable creation of breeches made of fig-leaves is another of Roger's jests.
66	Abig. Well, well, hard-hearted man, <u>dilate</u> Upon the weak infirmities of women; <u>These are fit texts</u> : but once there was a time –	= discourse. ¹
70	Would I had never seen those eyes, those eyes, Those <u>orient</u> eyes!	= "these are appropriate words you use on me"; but texts also referred specifically to Scripture. ¹
72	Roger. Ay, they were pearls once with you.	= bright or radiant, used to describe pearls, metaphorically applied to Roger's eyes. ¹
74	Abig. <u>Saving your reverence</u> , sir, so they are still.	= a very polite phrase, meaning "if I may say so". ¹
76	Roger. Nay, nay, I do beseech you, leave your <u>cogging</u> ;	= deceiving. ¹
78	What they are, they are;	

<p>They serve me without <u>spectacles</u>, I thank 'em.</p> <p>80</p> <p>82 Abig. Oh, will you kill me?</p> <p>84 Rog. I do not think I can; You're like a <u>copyhold</u>, with <u>nine lives</u> in 't.</p> <p>86 Abig. You were <u>wont to bear</u> a Christian fear about you: For your own worship's sake –</p> <p>88 Rog. I was a Christian fool then. Do you remember what a dance you led me? How I grew <u>qualmed</u> in love, and was a <u>dunce</u>?</p> <p>92 Could <u>expound</u> but once a quarter, and then was <u>out</u> too?</p> <p>And then, <u>at prayers once</u>,</p> <p>94 Out of the stinking <u>stir</u> you put me in,</p> <p>I prayed for my own <u>royal issue</u>? You do 96 Remember all this?</p> <p>98 Abig. Oh, be as then you were!</p> <p>100 Rog. I thank you for it: Surely, I will be wiser, Abigail; 102 And as the <u>ethnick poet</u> sings,</p> <p>I will not lose my oil and labour too. 104 You're for the worshipful, I take it, Abigail.</p> <p>106 Abig. Oh, take it so, and then I am for thee!</p> <p>108 Rog. I like these tears well, and this humbling also; They are symptoms of contrition, as a <u>father</u> saith.</p>	<p>= the word <i>spectacles</i>, meaning "glasses" had entered the language by the early 15th century, and appeared in both singular (<i>spectacle</i>) and plural forms.¹</p> <p>81: ie. by spurning her.</p> <p>84: <i>copyhold</i> = a form of land tenure in the <i>manor system</i>; a <i>manor</i> could be thought of as a self-contained village, under the political and economic control of a lord. A freeman might have a <i>freehold</i> interest in a portion of the land, which gave him the rights to the land similar to those of full ownership; a <i>copyhold</i> interest was a lesser interest, sort of like a lease, in which the lord owned the land, and had the right to the timber and minerals on the land; however, unlike in a lease, the copyholder could transfer his interest in the copyhold, by inheritance or sale, and the lord was obliged to accept the copyholder's nominee.¹⁰</p> <p>The <i>copyhold</i> is called such because the rights and obligations of the parties are written down in the <i>court roll</i> of the manor.¹⁰</p> <p><i>nine lives</i> = an allusion to the proverbial nine lives of a cat; a <i>copyhold</i> may be said to have <i>nine lives</i> perhaps because of its never-terminating transferability.</p> <p>= in the habit of bearing.</p> <p>= sick or nauseous.¹ = perhaps more wordplay with <i>dance</i> and <i>dunce</i>.</p> <p>= interpret Scripture.¹ = put out; the idea is that Roger was too dizzy with love to perform his duties properly.</p> <p>= these words appeared in the original and second printing only, and are normally omitted.</p> <p>= emotional tumult.</p> <p>= ie. children; the phrase <i>royal issue</i> refers specifically to the heir of a sovereign; when a king or queen was childless, as had been Elizabeth I, the people of the realm would pray for her to bear a child, as political instability could result if no definitive heir existed when the sovereign died. (We note that <i>royal</i> was omitted in most of the early editions).</p> <p>= pagan poet, alluding to Plautus, the 3rd century B.C. Roman comic playwright.³</p> <p>103: Roger reasonably translates a line from Plautus' play <i>Poenulus</i>.</p> <p>106: by now, Abigail has begun to tear up.</p> <p>= a confessor or other spiritual leader.¹</p>
--	---

<p>110 If I should fall into my <u>fit</u> again, Would you not shake me into a <u>quotidian coxcomb</u>?</p>	<p>= fever or seizure of love. 111: <i>quotidian</i> = daily;¹ <i>quotidian</i> was used to describe a malarial fever which attacked every day; Roger uses <i>fit</i> and <i>shake</i> to complete the metaphor; <i>coxcomb</i> = fool.</p>
<p>112 Would you not <u>use</u> me scurvily again, And give me <u>possets</u> with <u>purging comfits</u> in 't?</p>	<p>= treat. 113: <i>posset</i> = a medicinal drink made of curdled milk and a bit of alcohol, usually spiced or sweetened.¹ <i>purging comfits</i> = candied fruits or nuts that would act as a laxative.</p>
<p>114 I tell thee, gentlewoman, thou hast <u>been harder to me</u> Than a long chapter with a pedigree.</p>	<p>= ie. "treated me more severely". 115: perhaps Roger means a chapter of the Bible containing a long family tree.¹</p>
<p>116 <i>Abig.</i> Oh, curate, cure me! 118 I will love thee better, dearer, longer: I will do any thing; betray the secrets 120 Of the main household <u>to thy reformation</u>.</p>	<p>117: Abigail engages in her own little play on words. = ie. for Roger to address in his role as the household religious advisor; with <i>reformation</i>, Abigail continues her religious punning.</p>
<p>122 My lady shall look lovingly on thy learning; And when true time shall <u>'point thee for a parson</u>, I will convert thy eggs to penny-custards,</p>	<p>= "appoint you to your own parsonage".³ 123: she will bake custards that she can sell for a penny to supplement their income.</p>
<p>124 And thy <u>tithe-goose</u> shall graze and multiply. 126 <i>Rog.</i> I am mollified, As well shall testify this faithful kiss: 128 And have a great care, Mistress Abigail, How you depress the spirit any more 130 With your rebukes and mocks; for certainly The <u>edge</u> of such a folly cuts itself.</p>	<p>= a goose that Roger might receive as a tithe in kind. 131: a neat little aphorism from Roger. <i>edge</i> = ie. sharp edge.</p>
<p>132 <i>Abig.</i> Oh, sir, you have <u>pierced me thorough</u>! Here I vow 134 A recantation to those malicious faults I ever did against you. Never more 136 Will I <u>despise</u> your <u>learning</u>; never more Pin cards and <u>cony-tails</u> upon your <u>cassock</u>;</p>	<p>= Abigail picks up on Roger's <i>cutting</i> metaphor. = through. 136: <i>despise</i> = scorn. <i>learning</i> = advanced education, which was generally limited to members of the clergy. = rabbit tails. = a coat or long tunic worn by clergymen.¹</p>
<p>138 Never again reproach your reverend <u>night-cap</u>, And call it by the mangy name of <u>murrin</u>;</p>	<p>= Roger's <i>night-cap</i> has been the target of a lot of mockery in this play. = a brimmed, visor-less helmet worn by common soldiers;³ <i>murrin</i> was similar to the word <i>murrain</i>, which describes the flesh of an animal that has died from disease,¹ hence Abigail's use of <i>mangy</i>.</p>
<p>140 <u>Never</u> your reverend person more, and say, You look like <u>one of Baal's priests</u> in a <u>hanging</u>;</p>	<p>= ie. never reproach. 141: <i>one of Baal's priests</i> = allusion to the story of Elijah in 1 Kings 18: having shown the priests who worshiped the idol Baal that his (Elijah's) God could bring fire to burn his sacrifice, while Baal could not, Elijah had all the priests</p>

142 Never again, when you say grace, laugh at you,
Nor put you out at prayers; never cramp you more

144 With the great Book of Martyrs; nor, when you ride,

Get soap and thistles for you. No, my Roger,
146 These faults shall be corrected and amended,
As by the tenor of my tears appears.

148 **Rog.** Now cannot I hold, if I should be hanged; I must
cry too.
150 Come to thine own beloved, and do even
What thou wilt with me, sweet, sweet Abigail!
152 I am thine own for ever; here's my hand:
When Roger proves a recreant, hang him i' the bell-ropes!

154 *Enter Lady and Martha.*

156 **Lady.** Why, how now, Master Roger, no prayers
158 down with you to-night? did you hear the bell ring?

You are courting; your flock shall fat well for it.

160 **Rog.** I humbly ask your pardon. – I'll clap up prayers,
162 But stay a little, and be with you again.

164 *[Exit Roger.]*

166 *Enter Elder Loveless.*

168 **Lady.** How dare you, being so unworthy a fellow,
Presume to come to move me any more?

170 **Elder.** Ha, ha, ha!

172 **Lady.** What ails the fellow?

174

killed. Abigail's simile, comparing Roger to one of the executed pagan priests, would have been particularly hurtful to Roger!

hanging = a tapestry on which the story might be pictured, and not a **hanging** as on a gallows.³

143: **put you out at** = "disconcert you during your".

143-4: **never cramp...Martyrs = The Book of Martyrs** was an immensely influential book written by John Foxe and published in 1565; the book bitterly described the Catholic church's persecution against all those who turned from it, focusing especially on the trials and deaths of Protestantism's victims in Britain.¹⁰

The book was apparently prodigious in size: a 1583 copy on sale at *greatsite.com* measures 14x10x4 inches;²² Bond understands Abigail to mean that she will never again crowd up his chapel stall with the volume. (We note that the entire clause, "*With a...Martyrs*", is omitted by most of the quartos after the first).

= ie. as remedies for soreness; the implication is that Roger cannot ride a horse.³

= nature or character;¹ Abigail's tears, she suggests, demonstrate the genuineness of her expressed intent to reform.

= "I cannot keep from crying either".

= unfaithful or false.¹

= ie. "in your memorandum book".³ = ie. the church bell which signaled a time for prayer.

= Lady is humorously using a phrase normally associated with sheep to refer to the expected increase in the size of Roger's congregation, thanks to the children the couple will have.

= quickly concoct.¹

= "wait a little bit", addressed to Abigail.

= persuade.

176	Elder. The fellow comes to laugh at you. – I tell you, lady, I would not, <u>for your land</u> ,	= "even for all your land". = fool.
178	Be such a <u>coxcomb</u> , such a whining ass, As you decreed me for when I was last here.	
180	Lady. I joy to hear you are wise, sir; 'tis a rare jewel In an elder brother: pray, be wiser yet.	180-1: 'tis...brother = elder brothers, as the primary heirs of rich men, were stereotyped as squanderers of their inheritances, and thus not wise .
182	Elder. Methinks I am very wise: I do not come a-wooing; Indeed, I'll <u>move</u> no more love to your ladyship.	= propose or plead.
186	Lady. What <u>make you</u> here, then?	= "are you doing".
188	Elder. Only to see you, and be merry, lady; That's all my business. Faith, let's be very merry. Where's little Roger? he is a good fellow: An hour or two, well spent in wholesome mirth, Is worth a thousand of these <u>puling passions</u> . 'Tis an ill world for lovers.	= whimpering displays of emotion.
194	Lady. They were never fewer.	
196	Elder. I thank God, there is one less for me, lady.	
198	Lady. You were never any, sir.	199: harsh! "you were never a lover, sir."
200	Elder. Till now; and now I am the prettiest fellow!	201: Elder means that now that he is indifferent to women, he is more popular with them than ever. ³
202	Lady. You talk like a tailor, sir.	= ie. absurdly; ³ tailors were held in general contempt in Elizabethan society, and were the target of much mockery from our playwrights.
204	Elder. Methinks, your faces are no such fine things now.	
206	Lady. Why did you tell me you were wise? Lord, what a lying age is this! Where will you mend these faces?	
208	Elder. A <u>hog's face soused</u> is worth a hundred of 'em.	= pig's cheek salted for preservation; ³ the insults are growing crueler.
210	Lady. Sure, you had some sow <u>to</u> your mother.	= for.
212	Elder. She brought such fine white pigs as you, fit for none but parsons, lady.	214-5: ie. "the sow was actually your mother, who begot such pigs as you, fit only to be tithe-pigs."
214	Lady. 'Tis well you will allow us our clergy yet.	
216	Elder. That shall not <u>save you</u> . Oh, that I were in love again with a wish!	219: save you = ie. from damnation. 219-220: that I were...a wish = Bond interprets this to mean "I'd come to the rescue if I could revive that passing fancy I had."
218	Lady. By this light, you are a scurvy fellow! pray, be gone.	
220	Elder. You know, I am a <u>clean-skinned</u> man.	= Lady has, in line 222, used scurvy in its common sense of "contemptible", but Elder has chosen to take it more literally, meaning "scabby", or "suffering from some disease of the skin".
222	Lady. Do I know it?	

228	<i>Elder.</i> Come, come, you would know it; that's as	
230	good: but <u>not a snap</u> , <u>never long for 't</u> , not a snap, dear	= "not a morsel for you". = "don't bother pining for it".
232	lady.	
234	<i>Lady.</i> <u>Hark ye</u> , sir, hark ye, get you to <u>the suburbs</u> ;	= "listen closely". = the traditional location for a town's brothels.
236	<u>There's horse-flesh for such hounds</u> . Will you go, sir?	234: literally referring to horse-meat as common food for hounds, but <i>horse-flesh</i> suggests the flesh of whores, and Elder is the <i>hound</i> .
238	<i>Elder.</i> Lord, how I loved this woman! how I worshipped	= in the 17th century, pale skin was considered attractive.
240	This pretty calf with the <u>white face</u> here! As I live.	= with.
242	You were the prettiest fool to play <u>withal</u> ,	= she, ie. Lady, referring to her in the third person.
244	The wittiest little varlet! <u>It</u> would talk;	
246	Lord, how it talked! and when I angered it,	
248	It would cry out, and scratch, and eat no <u>meat</u> ,	= food.
250	And it would say, "Go hang!"	
252	<i>Lady.</i> It will say so still, if you anger it.	
254	<i>Elder.</i> And when I asked it, if it would be married,	
256	It sent me of an errand into France;	= mistreat.
258	And would <u>abuse</u> me, and be glad it did so.	
260	<i>Lady.</i> Sir, this is most unmanly; pray, be gone.	
262	<i>Elder.</i> And swear (even when it <u>twittered</u> to be at me)	= quivered with excitement. ¹
264	I was unhandsome.	
266	<i>Lady.</i> Have you no manners in you?	
268	<i>Elder.</i> And <u>say my back was melted</u> , when, the gods	257: <i>say my back was melted</i> = suppose Elder's strength - and perhaps also sexual prowess - (symbolized by a strong back) was dissipated". ¹
270	know,	
272	I kept it <u>at a charge</u> , – four <u>Flanders mares</u>	258: <i>at a charge</i> = under a load or burden. ¹ <i>Flanders mares</i> = large Flemish horses, but the term was used to refer derisively to big and strong women. ¹
274	Would have been easier <u>to me</u> , and a <u>fencer</u> .	= "for me to handle". = leaping horse. ³
276	<i>Lady.</i> You think all this is true now?	
278	<i>Elder.</i> Faith, whether it be or no, 'tis too good for you.	
280	But so much for our mirth: <u>now have at you in earnest</u> .	= "now I will really attack you."
282	<i>Lady.</i> There is enough, sir; I desire no more.	
284	<i>Elder.</i> Yes, faith, we'll have a <u>cast</u> at your <u>best parts</u> now;	268: <i>cast</i> = (1) reckoning, (2) analysis, specifically of the urine, to determine one's health, and (3) an astrological calculation. <i>best parts</i> = best qualities.
286	And then the devil take the worst!	
288	<i>Lady.</i> Pray, sir, no more; I am not much affected	
290	With your <u>commendatiōns</u> . 'Tis almost dinner:	= compliments.
292	I know they stay you at the <u>ordinary</u> .	273: "I know people are waiting for you at the ordinary." <i>ordinary</i> = a tavern where meals could be purchased for a fixed price.
294		

<p>Elder. <u>E'en a short grace</u>, and then I am gone. You are</p> <p>276 A woman, and the proudest that ever loved a <u>coach</u>;</p> <p>The scornfullest, scurviest, and most <u>senseless</u> woman;</p> <p>278 The greediest to be praised, and never <u>moved</u>, Though it be <u>gross</u> and open; the most envious,</p> <p>280 That, at the poor fame of another's face, Would eat your own, and more than is your own,</p> <p>282 The paint belonging to it; of such a self-opinion, That you think <u>none</u> can <u>deserve your glove</u>;</p> <p>284 And for your malice, you are so excellent, You might have been <u>your tempter's</u> tutor. Nay, 286 Never cry.</p> <p>288 Lady. Your own heart knows you wrong me. I cry for you!</p> <p>290 Elder. You shall, before I leave you.</p> <p>292 Lady. Is all this spoke in earnest?</p> <p>294 Elder. Yes, and more, 296 As soon as I can get it out.</p> <p>298 Lady. Well, out with 't.</p> <p>300 Elder. You are – let me see –</p> <p>302 Lady. One that has <u>used</u> you with too much respect.</p> <p>304 Elder. One that hath used me, since you will have it so, The basest, the most <u>foot-boy-like</u>, without respect 306 Of what I was, or what you might be by me; You have used me as I would use a <u>jade</u>,</p> <p>308 Ride him off's legs, then <u>turn him into the commons</u>;</p> <p>You have used me with <u>discretion</u>, and I thank you. 310 If you have many more such pretty servants, Pray, <u>build an hospital</u>, and, when they are old, 312 Keep 'em, for shame.</p> <p>314 Lady. I cannot think yet this is serious.</p> <p>316 Elder. Will you have more on 't!</p> <p>318 Lady. No, faith, there's enough, If it be true; too much, by all my part. 320 You are no lover, then?</p> <p>322 Elder. No, I had rather be a carrier.</p> <p>324 Lady. Why, the gods amend all!</p>	<p>= "first I'll say a brief grace", responding to Lady's suggestion it is dinner time, but meaning "just a few words more".</p> <p>= carriage, a status symbol.</p> <p>= without feeling.</p> <p>= ie. touched or affected (by Elder's praise).</p> <p>= obvious, flagrant.</p> <p>280-2: That...belonging to it = "one who, in envy of another woman's reputation for great beauty, would destroy her own face, out of spite."</p> <p>= usually replaced by no one. = ie. as a token or favour to be worn.</p> <p>= ie. the devil's.</p> <p>286: Lady's mask cracks: she can take no more, and breaks down weeping.</p> <p>302: hardly! used = treated.</p> <p>= a young assistant to the footman, suggesting the most menial of servants.</p> <p>= worn-out horse.</p> <p>= release him to graze in the commonly-owned pasture; in most of the editions after the first, into is changed to to for the sake of the meter.</p> <p>309: Elder is sarcastic; discretion = courtesy, civility.¹</p> <p>= endow the construction of a hospital, a familiar act of public service by a wealthy citizen.</p> <p>312: ie. "house them there, to your shame."</p> <p>322: Elder would rather be a messenger or porter (carrier),¹ as his burden would be less.³</p>
--	---

326 **Elder.** Neither do I think
 There can be such a fellow found i' the world,
 328 To be in love with such a froward woman:
 If there be such, they're mad; Jove comfort em!
 330 Now you have all; and I as new a man,
 As light and spirited, that I feel myself
 332 Clean through another creature. Oh, 'tis brave
 To be one's own man! I can see you now
 334 As I would see a picture; sit all day
 By you, and never kiss your hand; hear you sing,
 336 And never fall backward; but, with as set a temper

As I would hear a fiddler, rise and thank you:
 338 I can now keep my money in my purse,
 That still was gadding out for scarfs and waistcoats;

340 And keep my hand from merciers' sheep-skins finely:
 I can eat mutton now, and feast myself

342 With my two shillings, and can see a play
 For eighteen-pence again: I can, my lady.

344 **Lady.** [*Aside*] The carriage of this fellow vexes me. –
 346 Sir, pray, let me speak a little private with you. –
 [*Aside*] I must not suffer this.

348 **Elder.** Ha, ha, ha! What would you with me?
 350 You will not ravish me? Now, your set speech.

352 **Lady.** Thou perjured man!

354 **Elder.** Ha, ha, ha! this is a fine
Exordium: and why, I pray you, perjured?

356 **Lady.** Did you not swear a thousand thousand times,
 358 You loved me best of all things?

360 **Elder.** I do confess it: make your best of that.

362 **Lady.** Why do you say you do not, then?

364 **Elder.** Nay, I'll swear it.
 And give sufficient reason, – your own usage.

366 **Lady.** Do you not love me now, then?

368 **Elder.** No, faith.

326f: Elder couldn't be more pleased to be free of his obligations to Lady.
 = impossible to please.¹
 = the name of the Roman king of the gods was often used to refer to the Christian God.
 = excellent.

336: **fall backward** = Bond suggests this means "fainting in ecstasy", but the expression also carries more than a hint of "submit sexually".
set = fixed or even.

339: **still** = always, continuously.
gadding out for = wandering around in search of.¹
waistcoats = ie. waistcoats to buy for Lady; a **waist-coat** was an expensive upper-body garment worn by women underneath a gown, but still visible.¹

= a **mercier** was a dealer in textiles. = ie. used for gloves.³
 = commonly-used term for a whore, so Elder is likely being particularly vulgar - his overall point is that he is now free to spend his money on his own leisurely pursuits.

342-3: **can see a play...again** = 18 pence (ie. 18 pennies, or one-and-a-half shillings)¹ would have bought Elder the most expensive seat in one of London's more costly indoor theaters.³

= bearing.

= tolerate; Lady is thinking of a way to get back at Elder.

= introduction (to her **set speech**).¹

= ie. "treatment of me".

370	Lady. Did you ever think I loved you dearly?	
372	Elder. Yes; but I see but rotten fruits on 't.	
374	Lady. Do not deny your hand, for I must kiss it,	
376	And take my last farewell.	
378		[<i>Kisses his hand.</i>]
380	Now let me die,	
	So you be happy!	381: "so long as you are happy!"
382	Elder. I am too foolish. – Lady! speak, dear lady!	383: Lady begins to faint.
384	Lady. No, let me die.	
386		[<i>She swoons.</i>]
388	Mar. Oh, my sister!	
390	Abig. Oh, my lady! Help, help!	
392	Mar. Run for some <u>rosa solis</u> !	= a spiced cordial, used as a stimulant. ^{1,9}
394	Elder. I have played the fine ass! – <u>Bend</u> her body. –	= raise.
	Lady,	
396	Best, dearest, worthiest lady, hear your servant!	
	<u>I am not as I shewed.</u> – Oh, wretched fool,	= ie. "I was not presenting myself as I really feel."
398	To fling away the jewel of thy life thus! –	
	Give her more air. See, she begins to stir. –	
400	Sweet mistress, hear me!	
402	Lady. Is my servant well?	
404	Elder. In being yours, I am so.	
406	Lady. Then I care not.	
408	Elder. How do you? – Reach a chair there. – I confess	
	My fault not pardonable, in pursuing thus,	
410	Upon such tenderness, my willful error;	
	But had I known it would have <u>wrought thus with you,</u>	= "worked this way upon you".
412	Thus strangely, <u>not the world had won me to it:</u>	= "I would not have behaved this way for the world", or "the
	And let not, my best lady, any word,	whole world could not have persuaded me to behave this
414	Spoke to my end, disturb your quiet peace;	way."
	For sooner shall you know a general ruin	
416	Than my <u>faith</u> broken. Do not doubt this, mistress;	= loyalty, constancy (to her).
	For, by my life, I cannot live without you.	
418	Come, come, you shall not grieve: rather be angry,	
	And heap <u>infliction</u> on me; I will suffer.	= pain, aggravation. ¹
420	Oh, I could curse myself! Pray, smile upon me.	
	Upon my faith, it was but a trick to <u>try</u> you,	= test.
422	Knowing you loved me dearly, and yet strangely	
	That you would never <u>shew</u> it, though my means	423: <i>shew</i> = show.
424	Was all humility.	423-4: <i>though my...humility</i> = "even though I used
		the humblest means to induce you to show your love for
		me" (Dyce, p. 441).

426	<i>All.</i> Ha, ha	426: everyone - but Elder - begins laughing; perhaps Lady does something cheeky, like open one eye widely; Lady's fainting had been a subterfuge.
428	<i>Elder.</i> How now?	
430	<i>Lady.</i> I thank you, fine fool, for your most <u>fine plot</u> : This was a subtle one, a <u>stiff device</u>	= excellent plan. = formidable scheme. ²
432	To have caught <u>dotterels</u> with. Good senseless sir, Could you imagine I should swoon for you,	= a <i>dotterel</i> is a type of plover (ie. a bird) that is proverbially easy to catch. ¹
434	And know yourself to be an arrant ass, Ay, a <u>discovered</u> one? <u>'Tis quit</u> ; I thank you, sir.	= revealed. ¹ = "I have repaid you", or "we are even".
436	Ha, ha, ha!	
438	<i>Mar.</i> Take heed, sir; she may chance to swoon again.	
440	<i>All.</i> Ha, ha, ha!	
442	<i>Abig.</i> Step to her, sir; see how she changes colour!	
444	<i>Elder.</i> I'll go to hell first, and be better welcome. I am fooled, I do confess it, finely fooled;	
446	Lady-fooled, madam; and I thank you for it.	
448	<i>Lady.</i> Faith, 'tis not so much worth, sir: But if I know when you come next <u>a-birding</u> ,	= bird-hunting.
450	I'll have a stronger noose to hold the <u>woodcock</u> .	= a proverbially foolish bird, also considered easily caught.
452	<i>All.</i> Ha, ha, ha!	
454	<i>Elder.</i> I am glad to see you merry; pray, laugh on.	
456	<i>Mar.</i> <u>H'ad</u> a hard heart, <u>that</u> could not laugh at you, sir. Ha, ha, ha!	= ie. "he has". = who.
458	<i>Lady.</i> Pray, sister, do not laugh; you'll anger him; And then he'll rail like a rude <u>costermonger</u> ,	= apple-seller.
460	That school-boys had <u>cozened</u> of his apples, As loud and senseless.	= cheated or tricked.
462		
464	<i>Elder.</i> I will not rail.	
466	<i>Mar.</i> Faith, then, let's hear him, sister.	
468	<i>Elder.</i> Yes, you shall hear me.	
470	<i>Lady.</i> Shall we be the better for it, then?	
472	<i>Elder.</i> No; he that makes a woman better by his words, I'll have him sainted: blows will not do it.	
474		
476	<i>Lady.</i> By this light, he'll beat us.	475: sarcastic: "ooh, I'm afraid!"
478	<i>Elder.</i> You do deserve it richly, and may live To have a <u>beadle</u> do it.	= an officer charged with handing out punishment for minor offenses.
480	<i>Lady.</i> Now he rails.	
482	<i>Elder.</i> Come, scornful folly, if this be railing, you Shall hear me rail.	
484	<i>Lady.</i> Pray, put it in good words, then.	

486	<i>Elder.</i> The worst are good enough for such a <u>trifle</u> ,	= small or inconsequential person, such as Lady.
488	Such a proud piece of <u>cobweb-lawn</u> .	= a fine, transparent linen, ¹ scornfully referring to Lady by her fine clothing.
490	<i>Lady.</i> You bite, sir.	
492	<i>Elder.</i> I would till <u>the</u> bones cracked, <u>an</u> I had my will.	= ie. "your". = if.
494	<i>Mar.</i> We had best muzzle him; he grows mad.	494: Martha picks up on Lady's use of <i>bite</i> to speak about Elder as if he were a dog.
496	<i>Elder.</i> I would 'twere lawful in the next <u>great sickness</u> ,	496-9: <i>I would...infectious</i> = Elder refers to the practice of killing off dogs during the plague epidemics which regularly swept London, in the belief that dogs were carriers of infection; he expresses a wish that during the next such epidemic (<i>great sickness</i>), it would be legal to spare the lives of the canines and instead snuff those of the women, who are a plague in themselves.
498	To have the dogs spared, those harmless creatures,	
500	And knock i' the head these hot continual plagues, Women, that are more infectious. I hope The <u>state</u> will think on 't.	<i>state</i> (line 500) = government or administration.
502	<i>Lady.</i> Are you well, sir?	
504	<i>Mar.</i> He looks As though he had a grievous fit o' the <u>colic</u> .	= a type of stomach disorder.
506	<i>Elder.</i> <u>Green-ginger</u> , will you cure me?	= ginger root, used as a cure for upset stomach; ^{1,10} <i>green</i> was also used to describe an inexperienced maiden, ¹ and <i>ginger</i> was considered an aphrodesiac; ⁵ thus Elder's addressing Martha by this name is somewhat suggestive.
508		
510	<i>Abig.</i> I'll heat A <u>trencher</u> for him.	= a wooden platter; ¹ Abigail is faux-volunteering to prepare a little something to soothe Elder's stomach.
512	<i>Elder.</i> Dirty <u>December</u> , do; Thou with a face as old as <u>Erra Pater</u> ;	= alluding to Abigail's advanced age. = the name of an unknown astrologer whose name was used in the title of a 17th century almanac; hence the reference to Abigail's <i>prognosticating nose</i> . ³
514	Such a prognosticating nose; thou thing, That ten years since has <u>left</u> to be a woman,	= ceased.
516	Out-worn the expectation of a bawd;	516: perhaps meaning that she either outlasted or exhausted (<i>out-worn</i>) ¹ the patience of a pimp that she could perform satisfactorily as a prostitute; the general sense of the speech, however, is clear.
518	And thy dry bones <u>can reach</u> at nothing now, <u>But gords</u> or <u>nine-pins</u> ; pray, go fetch a trencher, go.	= ie. are good for. = "but to be used to make false-dice (<i>gords</i>) ³ or the pins used in <i>nine-pins</i> ", ie. a game that resembles a smaller version of bowling. ¹
520	<i>Lady.</i> Let him alone; he's <u>cracked</u> .	= mad.
522	<i>Abig.</i> I'll see him hanged first: he's a beastly fellow, To <u>use</u> a woman of my breeding thus;	523: as she did in the scene's opening lines, when she referred to herself as a <i>gentlewoman</i> , Abigail hangs doggedly on to her memory, or impression, of once having been a woman of consequence and status. <i>use</i> = treat.
524	Ay, <u>marry</u> , is he. <u>Would</u> I were a man, I'd make him eat his knave's words!	= an oath. = "I wish".

526	<i>Elder.</i> Tie your she-otter up, good Lady Folly,	
528	She stinks worse than a <u>bear-baiting</u> .	= a long-popular entertainment, in which a bear was tied to a post and tormented by dogs, with injury usually occurring to all the animals involved.
530	<i>Lady.</i> Why, will you be angry now?	
532	<i>Elder.</i> Go, <u>paint, and purge</u> ; Call in your <u>kennel</u> with you. You a lady!	= "put on your make-up and vomit or empty your bowels". ¹ = referring to Martha and Abigail as Lady's pack of dogs; ¹ there is a great deal of dog and animal imagery in this scene!
534	<i>Abig.</i> <u>Sirrah</u> , look to't against the quarter-sessions:	535: Abigail suggests Elder watch his words, as he may need to defend himself in a courtroom (<i>quarter sessions</i> were those criminal and civil courts that met quarterly). ¹
536	If there be good behaviour in the world,	
538	I'll have thee bound to it.	
540	<i>Elder.</i> You must not seek it in your lady's house, then. – Pray, send this ferret home, – and <u>spin</u> , good Abigail: –	= an imperative, telling her to get back to her domestic duties.
542	And, madam, that your ladyship may know In what base manner you have <u>used my service</u> ,	= "responded to my attentions to you".
544	I do from this hour hate thee heartily; And though your folly should whip you to repentance, And waken you at length, <u>to see my wrongs</u> ,	= "to recognize the injuries you have done to me".
546	'Tis not the endeavour of your life shall win me, –	546: the second half of this sentence occurs in line 551; in between this line and that - between the two dashes - Elder lists all the ways Lady might try, but fail, to win him back.
548	Not all the friends you have <u>in intercession</u> ,	= ie. "to intercede on your behalf".
550	Nor your submissive letters, though they spoke As many tears as words; not your knees grown To the ground in penitence, nor all your <u>state</u> , –	= wealth.
552	To kiss you; nor my pardon, nor will To give you Christian burial, if you die thus: So farewell. –	
554	When I am married and <u>made sure</u> , I'll come And visit you again, and <u>vex</u> you, lady:	= betrothed. ¹⁶ = torment.
556	By all my hopes, I'll be a torment to you, Worse than a tedious winter. I know you will	
558	Recant and <u>sue to me</u> ; but save that labour: I'll rather love a fever and continual thirst,	= appeal to, beg.
560	Rather <u>contract my youth to drink</u> , and <u>safer</u>	560: <i>contract...drink</i> = engage, as in a marriage contract, his youth to drinking, ie. bind himself to a life of alcoholism. <i>safer</i> = ie. with greater safety.
	<u>Dote upon quarrels</u> ,	= ie. take to dueling.
562	Or take a <u>drawn</u> whore from an <u>hospital</u> ,	562: <i>drawn</i> = perhaps meaning shrunken or wasted away by venereal disease. <i>hospital</i> = where a prostitute would be treated for

564 That time, diseases, and mercury had eaten,
Than to be drawn to love you.

566 **Lady.** Ha, ha, ha! Pray, do; but take heed though.

568 **Elder.** From thee, false dice, jades, cowards, and
plaguy summers,
570 Good Lord, deliver me!

[Exit Elder.]

572 **Lady.** But hark you, servant, hark ye! – Is he gone?
574 Call him again.

576 **Abig.** Hang him, paddock!

578 **Lady.** Art thou here still? fly, fly, and call my servant;
Fly, or ne'er see me more.

580 **Abig.** [*Aside*] I had rather knit again than see that rascal;
582 But I must do it.

[Exit Abigail.]

586 **Lady.** I would be loath to anger him too much.
What fine foolery is this in a woman,
588 To use those men most frowardly they love most?
If I should lose him thus, I were rightly served.
590 I hope he's not so much himself to take it
To the heart.

Re-enter Abigail.

592

594

How now? will he come back?

596 **Abig.** Never, he swears, whilst he can hear men say
598 There's any woman living: he swore he would ha' me first.

600 **Lady.** Didst thou entreat him, wench?

602 **Abig.** As well as I could, madam.
But this is still your way, to love being absent,
604 And when he's with you, laugh at him and abuse him.
There is another way, if you could hit on 't.
606

syphilis.

= used for the treatment of syphilis.

= Elder puns on **drawn** in line 562.

568: Elder, picking up on Lady's use of **heed**, lists a number of items he should take **heed** of - including Lady herself, as indicated by his saying **from thee**.

jades = worn out, and therefore worthless, horses that an unscrupulous salesman might offer.

plaguey = plague-filled.

= "listen to me".

= toad.¹

578-9: addressed to Abigail; for the first time, Lady actually worries that she might lose Elder.

fly = ie. hurry.

= per Bond, Abigail would rather be demoted to her lowly former position of needle-worker than go after Elder;³ but as Lady's employee, she knows she has no choice.

= ie. in women generally.

= treat. = perversely.¹

590-1: Lady hopes Elder's anger is not genuine.

take it...heart = the expression **to take (something) to heart** can be traced back at least to the late 14th century.

593: here we find a good example of the dramatic technique of **compression of time**: note that Abigail appears to have chased down Elder and had a whole conversation with him, and then returned, all in the time it took Lady to recite a mere 6-line speech (586-591); the technique speeds up the apparent action and increases the drama of the scene.

= ie. he would rather have Abigail before he takes back Lady!

= implore, beg.

= always. = "love him when he's not here".

605: Abigail's idea is never revealed, but it likely involves sex - perhaps she is thinking Lady can win Elder back by giving herself over to him; Lady, for her part, realizes there is something she can do - but not what Abigail is thinking.

608 *Lady.* Thou sayst true; get me paper, pen, and ink;
I'll write to him: I'd be loath he should sleep in's anger.
610 Women are most fools when they think they're wisest.

= "in his".

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT IV, SCENE II.

A Street.

Music.

*Enter Young Loveless and Widow,
going to be married: with them Captain and Poet.*

1 **Widow.** Pray, sir, cast off these fellows, as unfitting
2 For your bare knowledge, and far more your company.

1-2: the Widow asks Young to disassociate himself from his friends, as it is unfitting for him to even know them, never mind keep company with them.

bare = mere or simple.

far more = ie. even more unfitting for.

Is 't fit such ragamuffins as these are,

= the word *ragamuffin* appeared first as the name of a demon around 1400 A.D., before it began to be used to refer to an unkempt person in the late 16th century.

4 Should bear the name of friends, and furnish out
A civil house? you're to be married now;
6 And men, that love you, must expect a course
Far from your old career. If you will keep 'em,

= respectable, sober, grave.^{1,4}

6-7: *a course ...career* = a metaphor for Young to change his lifestyle; *course* and *career* both refer to a gallop of a horse.¹

8 Turn 'em to the stable, and there make 'em grooms:

8: if Young doesn't want to get rid of his comrades, then he should send them to occupy the stable, where they can work as servants attending the horses (*grooms*).

10 And yet, now I consider it, such beggars
Once set o' horse-back, you have heard, will ride –
How far, you had best to look to.

9-10: the full proverb is "set a beggar on horse-back, and he will ride like the devil", ie. when a poor man gains wealth suddenly, he quickly becomes arrogant or corrupt; Widow is offering an ironic warning about the Captain and Poet receiving a benefit greater than they merit.

14 **Capt.** Hear you, you
That must be lady: pray, content yourself,
And think upon your carriage soon at night,

= who. = ie. the wife of a knight.

15-16: the Captain suggests Widow should concern herself with preparing for her wedding night.

carriage = bearing or conduct.

16 What dressing will best take your knight, what waistcoat,

16: *dressing* = outfit.

waistcoat = an expensive garment worn by a woman on her upper body, and normally worn underneath a gown; a woman who wore a waistcoat without any garment over it was understood to be a courtesan or prostitute; hence the Captain may have a vaguely bawdy meaning in mind.

What cordial will do well i' the morning for him.

= restorative, which would be needed after a long night of romping.

18 What triers have you?

= by *trier*, the Captain could mean a judge, an examiner,

20 **Widow.** What do you mean, sir?

22 **Capt.** Those that must switch him up. If he start well,

Fear not, but cry, "Saint George," and bear him hard:
 24 When you perceive his wind grows hot and wanting,
 Let him a little down; he's fleet, ne'er doubt him,
 26 And stands sound.

28 **Widow.** Sir, you hear these fellows?

30 **Young.** Merry companions, wench, merry companions.

32 **Widow.** To one another let 'em be companions,
 But, good sir, not to you: you shall be civil,
 34 And slip off these base trappings.

36 **Capt.** He shall not need, my most sweet Lady Grocer,

If he be civil, not your powdered sugar,

38 Nor your raisins, shall persuade the captain
To live a coxcomb with him: let him be civil,
 40 And eat i' the Arches, and see what will come on 't.

42 **Poet.** Let him be civil, do: undo him; ay, that's the
 next way.
 I will not take, if he be civil once,
 44 Two hundred pounds a year to live with him.
 Be civil! there's a trim persuasiön.

46 **Capt.** If thou be'st civil, knight, (as Jove defend it!)
 48 Get thee another nose; that will be pulled
 Off by the angry boys for thy conversion.

50 The children thou shalt get on this civilian

one who tests something out,¹ or even one who shows off a horse at a sale, as Bond suggests;³ Widow asks him to clarify.

22-26: the Captain explains: the *triers* are those who will drive Young during his love-making, as with a *switch*; in this speech, the Captain, in a rather dirty and lengthy metaphor, compares the newly-weds' love-making to Widow's riding a horse; note the use of *hard*, *down* and *stands* as typical double-entendres.

= a common English battle cry.¹

= swift, agile.¹

= an affectionate name for a sweetheart.²

= respectable.

= release or cut off.¹ = ornaments.²

36f: the Captain alludes back to how Widow's now deceased husband made his fortune as a grocer; his point is to remind her of her own humble roots, and hence that she has no right to be snobbish.

= the Captain and Poet will keep using the word *civil*, which was first used by Widow, in a mocking tone.

39: *To live...with him* = ie. to play the fool and join him in living a respectable life.³

let him be civil...Arches = *the Arches* was the Ecclesiastical Court of Appeal for the province (an administrative district made up of several dioceses) of Canterbury, so-called because it was located at the old Church of St. Mary Arcusbus, or St. Mary Bow Church, which was known for its arches;^{3,29} the Captain puns on *civil*, using it to mean "respectable" and "Canonical", so that *eat i' the Arches* means "eat his words in the Arches",²⁹ ie. "let him change his behaviour".^{3,29}

= ruin.

= would.

= a fine argument.¹

= God forbid.³

= "yourself". = that one, ie. "your nose".

= ie. rowdy types. = on account of.

50: *get on* = beget by or with.

civilian = ie. Canonist, by which he means Widow; a civilian, or Canonist, is one who practices Roman civil law, from which Canonical law (see the note at lines 39-40 above) is derived; the Captain is revisiting his religion-

Cannot inherit by the law; they're ethnicks,

52 And all thy sport mere moral lechery:

54 When they are grown, having but little in 'em,
They may prove haberdashers, or gross grocers,
Like their dear dam there. Prithee, be civil, knight:

56 In time thou mayst read to thy household,
And be drunk once a-year; this would shew finely.

58 **Young.** I wonder, sweetheart, you will offer this;
60 You do not understand these gentlemen.
I will be short and pithy; I had rather
62 Cast you off, by the way of charge. These are creatures,

64 That nothing goes to the maintenance of
But corn and water. I will keep these fellows

Just in the competency of two hens.

66 **Widow.** If you can cast it so, sir, you have my liking:
68 If they eat less, I should not be offended.
But how these, sir, can live upon so little
70 As corn and water, I am unbelieving.

72 **Young.** Why, prithee, sweetheart, what's your ale?
Is not that corn and water, my sweet widow?

74 **Widow.** Ay; but, my sweet knight, where's the meat to this,
76 And clothes, that they must look for?

78 **Young.** In this short sentence, ale, is all included;
Meat, drink, and cloth. These are no ravening footmen,

80 No fellows that at ordinaries dare eat
Their eighteen-pence thrice out before they rise,

82 And yet go hungry to a play, and crack
More nuts than would suffice a dozen squirrels,

related metaphor of his previous speech.²⁹

= aliens.³ William Blackstone, in his *Commentaries of English Law* (7th Edition, 1775, p. 249), explains that in English common law, aliens could not inherit property.
= euphemism for "sex". = absolute, nothing but.

= ie. they will not be particularly manly or distinguished.¹
= dealer in hats.¹ = fat;¹ note the wordplay of **gross grocer**.
= contemptuous term for mother.¹

= ie. read prayers.³
= ie. thanks to Widow's gracious permission; with **once**, the Captain means "but once".

= ie. "why you speak this way".

= to the point.

62-65: **These are...two hens** = Young's argument for not dispensing with his friends is that they will cost next to nothing to support!
creatures = people.

= this will be explained at lines 72-73.

65: ie. his two friends will require no more provisioning than would be needed by **two hens** (which generally need no more than **corn and water** to keep them alive).
competency = sufficiency.²³
two hens = Young's entourage is down to two, the Captain and the Poet.

= contrive.³ = consent.¹

= ie. "what is".

= food.

= ie. "in the following maxim or pithy adage".¹

79: **meat, drink, and cloth** = apparently proverbial: "ale is meat, drink and cloth", though I have not found an earlier instance of it than this.

ravening = ravenous.

footmen = servants who ran alongside a wealthy employer's carriage, which activity would presumably increase their appetites.

= taverns.

81: ie. the sense is, they will not be foolish enough to spend their money on food first thing in the morning.

82-83: **crack more nuts** = cracking nuts was a common activity of early theater-goers.³

84	Besides the <u>din</u> , which is <u>damnable</u> :	= noise. = many modern editions print <i>most damnable</i> for the sake of the meter. ⁴ = ie. perhaps meaning "be apprenticed to".
86	I had rather rail, and be <u>confined to</u> a boat-maker, Than live among such rascals. These are people Of such a clean discretion in their diet,	
88	Of such a moderate sustenance, that they sweat If they but smell hot meat; porridge is poison;	
90	They hate a kitchen as they hate a <u>counter</u> ; And shew 'em but a feather-bed, they <u>swound</u> .	= prison. ³ = swoon.
92	Ale is their eating and their drinking surely, Which keeps their bodies clear and <u>soluble</u> .	= in good digestion. ³
94	Bread is a <u>binder</u> , and for that abolished,	= ie. it causes constipation.
96	Even in their ale, whose lost room fills an apple, Which is more airy, and of subtler nature.	95-96: Young describes a traditional drink known as a "wassail", in which warmed and spiced ale or wine was topped with toast to act as a sop; ³ roasted <i>crab-apples</i> were also often added to such drinks; the idea here is that the <i>apples</i> would take the place of the <i>bread</i> in the drinks (line 94).
98	The rest they take is little, and that little As little easy; for, like strict <u>men of order</u> ,	= ie. men who belonged to a monastic order, and so lived lives of strict asceticism. ³
	They do <u>correct</u> their bodies with a bench	99: <i>correct</i> = punish. 99-100: <i>bench...table</i> = a reference to the simplest, and perhaps most uncomfortable, of furniture.
100	Or a poor <u>stubborn</u> table; if a chimney Offer itself, with some few broken rushes,	= rigid. ¹
102	<u>They are in down</u> : when they are sick, <u>that's</u> drunk,	102: <i>They are in down</i> = ie. to his friends, lying on rushes in front of a fire is like lying on luxurious down. <i>that's</i> = ie. "which is to say".
104	They may have fresh straw; else they do despise These worldly pamperings. For their poor apparel, <u>'Tis worn out to the diet</u> ; <u>new</u> they seek none;	105: <i>'Tis worn...diet</i> = ie. their clothing corresponds in its poor nature to their spare diets. ³ <i>new</i> = new clothes.
106	And if a man should offer, they are angry, Scarce to be reconciled again with him:	106-7: they would rather lose the friendship of one who offered them clothing than accept the clothing.
108	You shall not hear 'em ask <u>one a cast doublet</u> Once in a year, which is a modesty	= ie. "from anybody". = tossed-away close-fitting jacket.
110	Befitting my poor friends: you see their wardrobe, Though <u>slender</u> , <u>competent</u> ; for shirts, I take it,	= poor, scanty. ¹ = adequate. ¹
112	They are things worn out of their remembrance. <u>Lousy</u> they will be when they <u>list</u> , and <u>mangy</u> ,	113: <i>lousy</i> = filthy. <i>list</i> = wish it. <i>mangy</i> = shabby or sparse, but also suffering from the mange. ¹
114	Which shews a fine variety; and then, to <u>cure</u> 'em, A <u>tanner's lime-pit</u> , which is little <u>charge</u> ;	= both (1) repair, and (2) heal. ¹ 115: <i>tanner's lime pit</i> = hides were soaked in a lime solution to remove the hair and epidermis; the loss of hair is a symptom of mange; <i>charge</i> = cost.

116 Two dogs, and these two, may be cured for threepence.

118 **Widow.** You have half persuaded me; pray, use your
pleasure: –

And, my good friends, since I do know your diet,
120 I'll take an order meat shall not offend you;
You shall have ale.

122 **Capt.** We ask no more; let it be mighty, lady,
124 And, if we perish, then our own sins on us!

126 **Young.** Come, forward, gentlemen; to church, my boys!
128 When we have done, I'll give you cheer in bowls.

[*Exeunt.*]

END OF ACT IV.

116: **dogs** = alludes back to **mangy** (line 113), completing the densely metaphoric nonsense Young is spewing.
these two = ie. the Captain and Poet.

120: Widow will make sure not to offend the guests by offering them any food.

= ie. where Elder and Widow will get married.

= food and drink generally;¹ Young is saying that all of his guests' provender will be in the form of alcohol, which would be served in **bowls**, as opposed to food, which would be served on platters.

ACT V.

SCENE I.

A Room in the House of Elder Loveless.

Enter Elder Loveless.

1 **Elder.** This senseless woman vexes me to the heart;
2 She will not from my memory: would she were
A man for one two hours, that I might beat her!
4 If I had been unhandsome, old, or jealous,
'T had been an even lay she might have scorned me;
6 But to be young, and, by this light, I think,
As proper as the proudest; made as clean,
8 As straight, and strong-backed; means and manners equal

With the best cloth-of-silver sir i' the kingdom –

10 But these are things, at some time of the moon,

Below the cut of canvass. Sure, she has

12 Some meeching rascal in her house, some hind,

That she hath seen bear, like another Milo,

14 Quarters of malt upon his back, and sing with 't;

Thrash all day, and i' th' evening, in his stockings,

16 Strike up a hornpipe, and there stink two hours,

And ne'er a whit the worse man: these are they,

18 These steel-chined rascals, that undo us all.

Would I had been a carter, or a coachman!

20 I had done the deed ere this time.

22 *Enter Servant.*

24 **Serv.** Sir, there's a gentleman without would speak
with you.

= lacking sense, foolish.²

= be gone from.

= ie. one or two.

= bet.

= an oath.

= handsome. = well-built.²

8: **straight** = strong, muscular.²

strong-backed = strong, but also suggesting that he is able to satisfy women sexually, especially with **straight**.

= ie. the wealthiest knight.

10-11: **But these...canvass** = **canvass**, a coarse cloth of hemp,¹ is contrasted with **cloth-of-silver**; metaphorically, Young means that women prefer a rougher sort of man over a more refined one.³

= "certainly"; in the following lines, Young drives himself crazy with jealousy, imagining Lady entertaining a physically powerful man of no standing.

= skulking, with amorous intent.³ = boor or peasant.²

13: **bear** = carry.

Milo = famous Olympic wrestling champion of ancient Greece, proverbial for his strength; he once carried an ox on his shoulders around the Olympic stadium, hence Elder's comparison; **Milo** is said to have died when he, in trying to tear apart a partially-cleaved tree, got his hand caught when the tree closed up, and he was torn apart by wolves.¹⁰

= a **quarter** of grain equaled eight bushels, or about 290 liters,¹ an obvious but pointed exaggeration.

= thresh grain, ie. work hard all day.

16: **hornpipe** = a dance performed to the accompaniment of a hornpipe,³ an ancient instrument that was sort of a cross between a clarinet and a recorder;

stink = smell or be offensive generally.¹

= the worse for it.

= strong-backed (**chine** = back). = ruin everything for.

= one who drives a cart, ie. a commoner.¹

= in an outer room or anteroom.

26	Elder. Bid him come in.	
28		[Exit Servant.]
30		Enter Welford.
32	Wel. <u>By your leave</u> , sir.	= "with your permission"; a polite apologetic phrase.
34	Elder. You are welcome: what's your will, sir?	
36	Wel. Have you forgotten me?	
38	Elder. I do not much remember you,	
40	Wel. You must, sir. I am that gentleman you pleased to <u>wrong</u> In your disguise; I have inquired you out.	= insult.
44	Elder. I was <u>disguised</u> indeed, sir, if I wronged you. Pray, where and when?	= ie. drunk, a secondary meaning for <i>disguised</i> . ³
46	Wel. In such a lady's house, sir,	
48	I need not name her.	
50	Elder. I do remember you: You seemed to be a suitor to that lady.	
52	Wel. If you remember this, do not forget	
54	How scurvily you <u>used</u> me: that was	= treated.
56	No place to quarrel in; pray you, think of it: If you be honest, you dare fight with me, Without more urging; else I must provoke ye.	56-57: Welford is essentially challenging Elder to a duel, to preserve his honour.
58	Elder. Sir, I dare fight, but never for a woman; I will not have her in my <u>cause</u> ; she's <u>mortal</u> ,	60: <i>cause</i> = a formal grounds for fighting a duel. <i>mortal</i> = deadly. ²
62	And so is not my anger. If you have brought A nobler subject for our swords, <u>I am for you</u> ; <u>In this</u> I would be loath to prick my finger: And <u>where</u> you say I wronged you, 'tis so far From my <u>profession</u> , that, amongst my fears, 66 <u>To do wrong is the greatest</u> . Credit me, We have been both <u>abused</u> , <u>not by ourselves</u>	= ie. "then I will be happy to oblige you." = ie. "but in this matter", ie. over a woman. = whereas. ⁴ = nature. ¹ = Elder would never consciously offend another. = mistreated or deceived. = not by each other.
68	(For that I hold a <u>spleen</u> , no sin of malice, And may, with man enough, be left forgotten),	68-69: when men insult each other, any offense can be written off as having been brought on by an excusable sudden emotion; the <i>spleen</i> was believed to be the source of high emotion or temper.
70	But by that willful, scornful piece of hatred, That much- <u>forgetful</u> lady: for whose sake, 72 If we should leave our reason, and run on Upon our sense, like rams, the little world 74 Of good men would laugh at us, and despise us, Fixing upon our desperate <u>memories</u> 76 The never-worn-out names of fools and <u>fencers</u> .	= neglectful. ¹ 72-73: <i>run on...rams</i> = Elder compares himself and Welford to two rams butting heads over a woman. ³
	Sir, 'tis not fear, but reason, makes me tell you,	= lasting reputations. = those who fence for public amusement in shows; ¹ the sense seems to be that Elder and Welford would be like those who fight for no better end than to entertain others.

78	In this I had rather help you, sir, than hurt you. And <u>you shall find it</u> , though you throw yourself	= "you'll find out", or "you'll discover".
80	Into as many dangers as she offers, Though you redeem her <u>lost name</u> every day,	= ruined reputation.
82	And find her out new honours with your sword, You shall but be <u>her mirth</u> , as I have been.	= ie. nothing more than a source of amusement for Lady.
84	Wel. I ask you mercy, sir; you have ta'en my edge off;	
86	Yet I <u>would fain be even with</u> this lady.	= "desire to get even with".
88	Elder. In which I'll be your helper: we are two; And they are two, – two sisters, <u>rich alike</u> ,	89: Elder refers to Lady and Martha. rich alike = meaning that both are rich, but not necessarily equally. ³
90	Only the elder has the prouder dowry. In <u>troth</u> , I pity this disgrace in you,	91-92: Elder means that he feels Welford's pain and disgrace, but for himself, he feels nothing; senseless had a more literal meaning of "not feeling anything". troth = truth.
92	Yet of mine own I am <u>senseless</u> . Do but	
94	Follow my counsel, and I'll <u>pawn my spirit</u> , We'll <u>over-reach</u> 'em yet: <u>the means is this</u> –	= the modern equivalent would be "bet my life". = outwit. = "here's how".
96	<i>Re-enter Servant.</i>	
98	Serv. Sir, there's a gentlewoman will needs speak with you; I cannot keep her out; she's entered, sir.	
100	Elder. It is the waiting-woman: pray, be not seen. –	
102	<u>Sirrah</u> , hold her in discourse a while.	= form of address for a servant.
104	<i>[Exit Servant.]</i>	
106	Hark in your ear [<i>whispers</i>]: go, and despatch it quickly: When I come in, I'll tell you all the project.	= Elder whispers to Welford: he has a plan!
108	Wel. I care not which I have.	
110	Elder. Away; 'tis done;	
112	She must not see you.	
114	<i>[Exit Welford.]</i>	
116	<i>Enter Abigail.</i>	
118	Now, <u>Lady Guinever</u> , what news with you?	= obviously ironic comparison to the legendary woman of great beauty.
120	Abig. Pray, leave these <u>frumps</u> , sir, and receive this letter.	= mocks.
122	<i>[Gives letter.]</i>	
124	Elder. From whom, good <u>Vanity</u> ?	= another insulting name, meaning "worthless". ¹
126	Abig. 'Tis from my lady, sir: alas, good soul, She cries and takes on!	
128	Elder. Does she so, good soul?	129f: an Elizabethan audience would have found Elder's extreme abuse of the old servant woman very funny.

130	<p>Would she not have a <u>caudle</u>? Does she send you</p> <p>With your fine oratory, <u>goody Tully</u>,</p>	<p>= a warm, sweetened alcoholic drink, given especially to the sick; Elder bitterly takes Abigail's description of Lady to mean she is not well.¹</p> <p>131: goody = a title of courtesy for women of low status, here used ironically. Tully = Cicero, the ancient Roman senator famous for his oratory.</p>
132	<p>To tie me to belief again? – Bring out the <u>cat-hounds</u>! –</p> <p>I'll make you <u>take a tree</u>, whore; then with my <u>tiller</u></p>	<p>= hounds that would chase cats.</p> <p>133: take a tree = ie. as a cat would be forced to do. tiller = the wooden beam of a cross-bow which has been notched to hold the arrow in place; hence the cross-bow itself.¹</p>
134	<p>Bring down <u>your gibship</u>, and then have you <u>cased</u>,</p> <p>And hung up i' the <u>warren</u>,</p>	<p>134: gib = cat, but also an abusive term for an old woman.¹ your gibship = parody of <i>your ladyship</i>. cased = skinned.</p>
136	<p>Abig. I am no beast, sir; would you knew it!</p>	<p>= a section of land reserved for breeding animals, but also a brothel.¹</p>
138	<p>Elder. Would I did! for I am yet very <u>doubtful</u>.</p>	<p>= suspicious (that she is a beast); we remember that Welford had practically called Abigail an animal at Act III.i.563.</p>
140	<p>What will you say now?</p>	
142	<p>Abig. Nothing, not I.</p>	
144	<p>Elder. Art thou a woman, and say nothing?</p>	<p>144: a common sentiment, that a woman who remained silent was a miracle.</p>
146	<p>Abig. Unless you'll hear me with more moderation. I can speak wise enough.</p>	
148	<p>Elder. And loud enough. Will <u>your lady</u> love me?</p>	<p>= "your mistress", ie. Lady.</p>
150	<p>Abig. It seems so by her letter and her lamentations;</p>	
152	<p>But you are <u>such another man</u>!</p>	<p>= ie. such a changed man.³</p>
154	<p>Elder. Not such another as I was, <u>mumps</u>;</p>	<p>= a derisive form of address for an old woman.¹</p>
156	<p>Nor will not be. I'll read her fine epistle.</p>	
158	<p>[<i>Reads.</i>]</p> <p>Ha, ha, ha! is not thy mistress mad?</p>	
160	<p>Abig. For you she will be. 'Tis a shame you should</p>	
162	<p><u>Use</u> a poor gentlewoman so <u>untowardly</u>:</p>	<p>= treat. = wretchedly.²</p>
164	<p>She loves the ground you tread on; and you, hard heart,</p>	
166	<p>Because she jested with you, mean to kill her.</p>	
168	<p>'Tis a fine conquest, as they say.</p> <p>[<i>Weeps.</i>]</p>	
170	<p>Elder. Hast thou so much moisture</p> <p><u>In thy whit-leather hide yet</u>, that thou canst cry?</p>	<p>170: "left in your skin (hide), which is as dry as leather". whit-leather = leather made pliant by treatment with alum and salt.¹</p>

I would have sworn thou hadst been <u>touchwood</u> five year since.	= ie. wood so dry as to catch fire easily. ¹
172 Nay, <u>let it rain</u> ; thy face <u>chops</u> for a shower, Like a dry dunghill.	172: <i>let it rain</i> = ie. "go ahead and cry." <i>chops</i> = cracks or cleaves open, like dried ground. ^{1,3}
174 <i>Abig.</i> I'll not endure 176 This <u>ribaldry</u> . Farewell, i' the devil's name! If my lady die, I'll be sworn before a jury, 178 <u>Thou</u> art the cause on 't.	= coarseness, though usually applied to lewd behavior. ¹ = having failed in her mission, and now the target of Elder's abuse, Abigail switches pronouns, addressing Elder with the contemptuous <i>thou</i> .
180 <i>Elder.</i> Do, <u>maukin</u> , do. Deliver to your lady from me this: 182 I mean to see her, <u>if I have no other business</u> ;	= a slovenly, lower-class woman. ¹ = "if I have nothing else to do."
184 Which before I'll <u>want</u> , to come to her, I mean To go seek birds' nests. Yet I may come, too;	183: <i>want</i> = lack (ie. any other business). 183-4: <i>I mean...nests</i> = an example of the most trivial of errands Elder must do before he would see Lady again.
186 But if I come, From this <u>door</u> till I see her, will I think	186: "from the moment I leave my door till I see her I will be thinking about"; Dyce logically wonders if <i>door</i> should be <i>hour</i> .
How to rail <u>vildly</u> at her; how to vex her, 188 And make her cry so much, that the physician, If she fall sick upon it, shall want urine	= vilely, ie. meanly. ² 188-191: it was a common medical practice for a physician to diagnose an illness by studying a person's urine; Elder is suggesting that he will cause Lady to cry so much that she won't have enough water remaining in her body to provide a urine sample; consequently, if the physician is unable to provide a diagnosis, she will die.
190 To find the cause by, and she remediless Die in her heresy. Farewell, <u>old adage</u> !	= Welford had previously called Abigail by this name, back at Act III.i.587.
192 I hope to see the boys make <u>pot-guns on</u> thee.	192: Bond interprets the line to mean that Abigail is so dried up, like a hollow stick, that boys can use her as a pot-gun. <i>pot-guns</i> = pea-shooters, from which children shot chewed paper; ³ from <i>pot-gun</i> is derived the word <i>pop-gun</i> . <i>on</i> = of.
194 <i>Abig.</i> Thou 'rt a vile man: God <u>bless my issue</u> from thee!	= "protect my children".
196 <i>Elder.</i> Thou hast but one, and that's in thy left <u>crupper</u> , That makes thee <u>hobble</u> so: you must be <u>ground</u> 198 I' the <u>breech</u> like a top; you'll never spin well else.	196-8: Elder, more vulgar than ever, takes <i>issue</i> to mean an outlet from which a liquid flows; he suggests Abigail has one such outlet, located in her buttocks (<i>crupper</i>); then says her buttocks (<i>breech</i>) need to be sharpened (<i>ground</i>) in order for her to be able to spin properly like a top; but <i>crupper</i> can also refer to the strap on a horse that is attached to a saddle and runs behind the horse and through its legs to keep the saddle from falling off; such a strap would <i>hobble</i> Abigail. ¹
Farewell, <u>fytchock</u> !	= ie. fitchew, ie. a polecat, a term used to describe a loose woman. ¹
200 [Exeunt <u>severally</u> .]	= ie. in different directions.

ACT V, SCENE II.

A Room in Lady's House.

Enter Lady.

Entering Character: Lady begins the scene with a soliloquy in which she decries the uncontrollable urge that drives women generally, and herself particularly, to act perversely against their own best interests.

1 **Lady.** Is it not strange that every woman's will
2 Should track out new ways to disturb herself?
3 If I should call my reason to account,
4 It cannot answer why I keep myself
5 From mine own wish, and stop the man I love
6 From his; and every hour repent again,
7 Yet still go on. I know 'tis like a man

= drive out from shelter by hunting, ie. hunt out.¹

3-7: **If I should...still go on** = Lady rues the inability of her reason to control her urge to treat Elder the way she does.

8 That wants his natural sleep, and, growing dull,
9 Would gladly give the remnant of his life
10 For two hours' rest; yet, through his frowardness,
11 Will rather choose to watch another man,
12 Drowsy as he, than take his own repose.
13 All this I know; yet a strange peevishness,
14 And anger not to have the power to do
15 Things unexpected, carries me away
16 To mine own ruin: I had rather die
17 Sometimes than not disgrace in public him
18 Whom people think I love; and do 't with oaths,
19 And am in earnest then. Oh, what are we?
20 Men, you must answer this, that dare obey
21 Such things as we command.

7-12: **I know...repose** = in this analogy, Lady compares her proud self to a man who, though desperate for sleep, will rather stay awake than admit to being as fatigued as another equally sleepy man; this is an excellent bit of psychological insight from our authors.

= lacks.

= perversity.

= ie. remain awake with.¹

= ie. women.

20-21: men are just as guilty as women are, because they acquiesce to the perverse demands women make on them.

answer = ie. answer for.

Enter Abigail.

24
25
26 How now? what news?

27 **Abig.** Faith, madam, none worth hearing.

28 **Lady.** Is he not come?

29 **Abig.** No, truly.

30 **Lady.** Nor has he writ?

31 **Abig.** Neither. I pray God you have not undone
32 yourself.

= brought ruin on.

33 **Lady.** Why, but what says he?

34 **Abig.** Faith, he talks strangely.

42 **Lady.** How strangely?

44 **Abig.** First, at your letter he laughed extremely.

46 **Lady.** What, in contempt?

48 **Abig.** He laughed monstrous loud, as he would die; –
 50 and when you wrote it, I think, you were in no such
 52 merry mood, to provoke him that way; – and having
 54 done, he cried, "Alas for her!" and violently laughed
 56 again.

58 **Lady.** Did he?

60 **Abig.** Yes; till I was angry.

62 **Lady.** Angry! why?
 64 Why wert thou angry? he did do but well;
 66 I did deserve it; he had been a fool,
 68 An unfit man for any one to love,
 70 Had he not laughed thus at me. You were angry!
 72 That shewed your folly: I shall love him more
 74 For that, than all that e'er he did before.
 76 But said he nothing else?

78 **Abig.** Many uncertain things. He said, though you had
 80 mocked him, because you were a woman, he could
 82 wish to do you so much favour as to see you: yet, he
 84 said, he knew you rash, and was loath to offend you
 86 with the sight of one whom now he was bound not to
 88 leave.

90 **Lady.** What one was that?

92 **Abig.** I know not, but truly I do fear there is a making
 94 up there; for I heard the servants, as I passed by some,
 96 whisper such a thing: and as I came back through the
 98 hall, there were two or three clerks writing great
conveyances in haste, which, they said, were for their
 mistress' jointure.

Lady. 'Tis very like, and fit it should be so;
 For he does think, and reasonably think,
 That I should keep him, with my idle tricks,
 For ever ere he married.

Abig. At last, he said it should go hard but he
 Would see you, for your satisfactiön.

Lady. All we, that are called women, know as well
 As men, it were a far more noble thing
 To grace where we are graced, and give respect
 There where we are respected: yet we practise
 A wilder course, and never bend our eyes
 On men with pleasure, till they find the way
 To give us a neglect; then we, too late,
 Perceive the loss of what we might have had,

58-65: Lady actually has more respect for Elder now than if he had immediately given in to her pleading letter and come running over to see her.

70-72: *was loath...leave* = Elder has a new sweetheart, and would not want to offend Lady by appearing with her by his side.

76-77: *a making up* = a match, a marital arrangement.

= legal contracts.²

= a material provision for the wife, should the husband pre-decease her.

83-86: Lady acknowledges that Elder has done the right thing in finding another woman to be his wife, as he reasonably could expect Lady to continue to string him along and avoid marrying him indefinitely.

like (line 83) = likely.

= not be easy to do.

= neglect us.

100	And dote <u>to death</u> .	= "until we die."
102	<i>Enter Martha.</i>	
104	Mar. Sister, yonder's your <u>servant</u> , With a gentlewoman with him.	= lover, ie. Elder.
106	Lady. Where?	
108	Mar. Close at the door.	
110	Lady. Alas, I am undone! I fear he is betrothed. What kind of woman is she?	
112		
114	Mar. A most <u>ill-favoured</u> one, with <u>her mask on</u> ; And how her face should mend the rest, I know not.	= ugly. = Elizabethan women frequently wore <i>masks</i> when going out, to protect their complexions from the elements.
116	Lady. But yet her mind is of a milder stuff Than mine was.	116-7: Lady appreciates that Elder's new fiancée, unattrac- tive as she might be, no doubt treats him better than she did.
118	<i>Enter Elder Loveless and Welford in woman's apparel.</i>	
122	[<i>Aside</i>] Now I see him, if my heart Swell not again – away, thou woman's pride! – So that I cannot speak a gentle word to him, Let me not live.	122-5: a typical complex sentence: "don't let me live if I cannot control my pride enough to speak civilly to him."
124		
126		
128	Elder. By your leave here.	
130	Lady. How now? what new trick invites you hither? Ha' you a <u>fine device again</u> ?	= another great scheme.
132	Elder. Faith, this is the finest device I have now. – How dost thou, sweetheart?	
134		
136	Wel. Why, very well, so long as I may please You, my dear lover: I <u>nor</u> can nor will Be ill when you are well, well when you are ill.	= neither.
138		
140	Elder. Oh, thy sweet temper! What would I have given, <u>That lady had been like thee</u> ! See'st thou her? That face, my love, joined with thy humble mind, Had made a wench indeed.	= "for Lady to have been like you". 142: "would have made a fine woman indeed".
142		
144	Wel. Alas, my love. What God hath done I dare not think to <u>mend</u> ! I use no <u>paint</u> nor any <u>drugs of art</u> ; My hands and face will shew it.	= fix, improve upon. = cosmetics. = dyes used to deceive (<i>art</i> = artifice).
146		
148	Lady. Why, what thing have you brought to shew us there?	
150	Do you take money for it?	150: despite her good intentions, Lady can't help but insult Elder and his ugly "girlfriend"; she is asking if he would take money to sell her, or for exhibiting her, like a freak.
152	Elder. A godlike thing, Not to be bought for money; 'tis my mistress,	

154	In whom there is no <u>passion</u> , nor no scorn; <u>What I will is for law</u> . Pray you, <u>salute</u> her.	= unseemly displays of emotion. = "my word is law with her". = greet with a kiss.
156		
158	Lady. Salute her! by this good light, I would not kiss her For half my wealth.	
160	Elder. Why? why, pray you? You shall see me do 't afore you: look you.	
162		
	[<i>Kisses Welford.</i>]	
164	Lady. Now <u>fie upon thee!</u> a beast would not have done 't. –	= an expression of disgust or reproach. ¹
166	I would not kiss thee <u>of a month</u> , to gain A kingdom.	= once a month. ³
168		
170	Elder. Marry, you shall not be troubled.	
172	Lady. Why, was there ever such a <u>Meg</u> as this? Sure, thou art mad.	= an allusion to Long Meg , an unusually tall woman who appears to have lived during the reign of Henry VIII; her exploits were the topic of plays and ballads, which por- trayed her as a boisterous amazon. ²⁴
174	Elder. I was mad once, when I loved pictures; For what are shape and colours else but pictures?	174-5: Elder is comparing loving Lady to loving a picture of her, in the sense that his attraction was based solely on looks.
176	<u>In that tawny hide</u> there lies an endless mass Of virtues, when all <u>your red and white ones want it</u> .	= ie. in Welford's yellow-brown (tawny) ¹ hide. = ie. Lady's blood and flesh. = lack a single virtue.
178		
180	Lady. And this is she you are to marry, is't not?	
182	Elder. Yes, indeed, is't.	
184	Lady. God give you joy!	
186	Elder. Amen.	
188	Wel. I thank you, <u>as unknown</u> , for your good wish. The like to you, whenever you shall wed.	= ie. "as one who is still a virgin". ²
190	Elder. Oh, gentle spirit!	
192	Lady. You thank me! I pray, Keep your breath nearer you; I do not like it.	
194		
196	Wel. I would not willingly offend at all; Much less a lady of your worthy <u>parts</u> .	= qualities.
198	Elder. Sweet, sweet!	
200	Lady. I do not think this woman can by nature Be <u>thus, thus</u> ugly: sure, she's some common strumpet, Deformed with exercise of sin.	= likely meaning "so, so", ie. an intensifier.
202		
204	Wel. [<i>Kneeling</i>] Oh, sir, <u>Believe not this!</u> for Heaven so comfort me, As I am free from foul <u>pollutiön</u> With any man! my honour ta'en away,	= "don't believe a word she says!" = moral corruption or sin. 207-8: my honour...no woman = "without my honour, I
206		

208	I am no woman.	am not a true woman"; in a man's world, one expected one's wife to be a virgin.
210	Elder. [<i>Raising Welford</i>] Arise, my dearest soul;	
212	I do not <u>credit</u> it. – Alas, I fear	= believe.
	Her tender heart will break with this reproach! –	
214	Fie, that you know no more civility	= maiden.
	To a weak <u>virgin</u> ! – 'Tis no matter, sweet;	
216	Let her say what she will, thou art not worse	
	To me, and therefore not at all; be <u>careless</u> .	= literally "without care", free from anxiety.
218		
220	Wel. For all things else I would; but for mine honour, Methinks –	
222	Elder. Alas, thine honour is not stained!–	
224	Is this the business that you sent for me About?	223-4: Elder now addresses Lady; note how he addresses his sweetheart with the affectionate <i>thou</i> , but Lady with the formal and distant <i>you</i> .
226	Mar. Faith, sister, you are much to blame To <u>use</u> a woman, whatsoever she be,	= treat.
228	Thus. I'll salute her. – You are welcome hither.	
230		
	[<i>Kisses Welford.</i>]	
232	Wel. I humbly thank you.	
234	Elder. Mild <u>still</u> as the dove, For all these injuries. Come, shall we go?	= always.
236	I love thee not so <u>illy</u> to keep thee here, A <u>jesting-stock</u> . – Adieu, to the world's end!	= illy. = laughing stock; both expressions entered the written language in the 1530's. ¹
238		
240	Lady. Why, <u>whither</u> now?	= to where, ie. "where are you going".
242	Elder. Nay, you shall never know. Because you shall not find me.	
244	Lady. I pray, let me speak with you.	
246	Elder. 'Tis very well. – Come.	
248	Lady. I pray you, let me speak with you.	
250	Elder. Yes, for another mock.	
252	Lady. By Heaven, I have no mocks: good sir, a word.	
254	Elder. Though you deserve not so much at my hands, yet, if you be in such earnest, I'll speak a word with you: but, I beseech you, be brief; for, in good faith, there's a parson and a license <u>stay</u> for us i' the church all this while; and, you know, ' <u>tis night</u> .	= waiting. = Elder would naturally be looking forward to his wedding night.
256		
258		
260	Lady. Sir, give me hearing patiently, and whatsoever I have heretofore spoke jestingly, forget;	
262	For, as I hope for mercy any where. What I shall utter now is from my heart,	
264	And as I mean.	

266 **Elder.** Well, well, what do you mean?

268 **Lady.** Was not I once your mistress, and you my servant?

270 **Elder.** Oh, 'tis about the old matter.

272 [Going.]

274 **Lady.** Nay, good sir, stay me out:
I would but hear you excuse yourself,
276 Why you should take this woman, and leave me.

278 **Elder.** Prithee, why not? deserves she not as much
As you?

280 **Lady.** I think not, if you will look
282 With an indifferency upon us both.

284 **Elder.** Upon your faces, 'tis true; but if judicially we
shall cast our eyes upon your minds, you are a thousand
286 women off her in worth. She cannot swound in jest, nor
set her lover tasks, to shew her peevishness and his
288 affection; nor cross what he says, though it be
canonical. She's a good plain wench, that will do as I
290 will have her, and bring me lusty boys, to throw the
sledge, and lift at pigs of lead. And for a wife, she's far
292 beyond you: what can you do in a household to provide
for your issue, but lie a-bed and get 'em? your business
294 is to dress you, and at idle hours to eat; when she can do
a thousand profitable things; – she can do pretty well in
296 the pastry, and knows how pullen should be crammed;
she cuts cambric at a thread, weaves bone-lace, and
298 quilts balls: and what are you good for?

300 **Lady.** Admit it true, that she were far beyond me in
all respects; does that give you a license to forswear
302 yourself?

304 **Elder.** Forswear myself! how?

306 **Lady.** Perhaps you have forgot the innumerable oaths
you have uttered, in disclaiming all for wives but me:
308 I'll not remember you. God give you joy!

272: Elder begins to exit.

= "let me speak my mind before you go."

281-2: Lady asks Elder to objectively compare the two women's looks.

= pretend to faint, as Lady did.

= like when she sent him to go to France!

288-9: **cross...canonical** = thwart his word, even if it were as good as Scripture; note the possible pun on **cross**.

290: **bring** = bear, beget.

to = ie. "who will be strong enough to".

290-1: **throw the sledge** = ie. toss a sledge hammer, a popular sport of the era, in which participants competed to see who could throw a heavy object, like a stone or sledge hammer, the farthest, an entertainment more generically called "casting of the bar".^{1,9}

= to lift bars (**pigs**) of lead that have solidified after coming out of a smelter.^{1,3}

= children.

= yourself.

295-6: **she can do...pastry** = ie. she can cook or bake.

pastry = the place where pastry is made.¹

= how to fatten up (**cram**) poultry (**pullen**).¹

297: **cuts cambric...thread** = Bond suggests this refers to the skillful cutting of cambric in a pattern as it is stretched upon a frame of some kind.³

bone-lace = linen lace knitted upon a pattern marked by pins, and utilizing bobbins made of bone.^{1,3}

= perjure: Lady will explain in a moment.

306-7: vows to marry were considered inviolable, but Elder reasonably understands that to be meaningful, the vows must be reciprocal.

= remind.

310 **Elder.** Nay, but conceive me; the intent of oaths is
 312 ever understood. Admit I should protest to such a friend
 314 to see him at his lodging to-morrow; divines would
 316 never hold me perjured, if I were struck blind, or he hid
 318 him where my diligent search could not find him, so
 320 there were no cross act of mine own in 't. Can it be
 322 imagined I meant to force you to marriage, and to have
 324 you, whether you will or no?
Lady. Alas, you need not! I make already tender of
 myself, and then you are forsworn.
Elder. Some sin, I see, indeed, must necessarily
 Fall upon me; as whosoever deals
 With women shall never utterly avoid it.
 Yet I would choose the least ill, which is to
 Forsake you, that have done me all the abuses
 Of a malignant woman, contemned my service,
 And would have held me prating about marriage
 Till I had been past getting of children
 Than her, that hath forsook her family,
 And put her tender body in my hand,
 Upon my word.
Lady. Which of us swore you first to?
Elder. Why, to you.
Lady. Which oath is to be kept, then?
Elder. I prithee, do not urge my sins unto me,
Without I could amend 'em.
Lady. Why, you may,
 By wedding me.
Elder. How will that satisfy
 My word to her?
Lady. It is not to be kept,
 And needs no satisfaction: 'tis an error
Fit for repentance only.
Elder. Shall I live
 To wrong that tender-hearted virgin so?
 It may not be.
Lady. Why may it not be?

310: *conceive* = understand.
 310-1: *the intent...understood* = the sense and good
 faith behind a vow is more important than its literally
 being followed.³
 = suppose. = assert, promise.
 = priests or theologians.¹
 = himself.
 = ie. "no deliberate failure on my part to fulfill my promise."
 319-320: by offering herself definitely to marry Elder, Lady
 obliges Elder to follow through on his vow to marry her;
 which, if he fails to do, invites damnation.
 = who has.
 = scorned.
 = ie. ie. beyond the age when he could actually father
 children.
 = ie. Welford.
 = delicate or inexperienced.¹
 332: "depending on my word".³
 = "keep reminding me of".
 = ie. "as I am in no position to".
 = Lady suggests Elder's breaking his vow to Welford
 would constitute something like a *venial sin*, that is, a lesser
 sin, that can be purged with penance (compare a *venial sin* to
 the more serious *mortal sin*, which constitutes a complete
 break with God).

360	Elder. I swear I had rather marry thee than her; But yet mine <u>honesty</u> –	= honour.
362	Lady. What honesty? Tis more preserved this way. Come, <u>by this light</u> ,	= a common oath.
364	Servant, <u>thou shalt</u> : I'll kiss thee on't.	= ie. "you shall marry me".
366	Elder. This kiss, Indeed, is sweet: pray God, no sin lie under it!	
368	Lady. There is no sin at all; try but another.	
370	Wel. Oh, my heart!	
372	Mar. Help, sister! <u>this lady swoons</u> .	= now Welford is fainting!
374	Elder. How do you?	
376	Wel. Why, very well, if you be so.	
378	Elder. Such a quiet mind lives not in any woman. I shall do a most ungodly thing. Hear me one word more, which, by all my hopes, I will not alter. I did make an oath, When <u>you</u> delayed me so, that this very night	= Elder is addressing Lady.
380	I would be married: now if you will go Without delay, suddenly, as late as it is, With your own minister, to your own chapel, I'll wed you, and to bed.	
382	Lady. <u>A match</u> , dear servant.	= "it's a deal", or "agreed, it's a marriage".
384	Elder. For if you should forsake me now, I care not: She would not though, for all her injuries; Such is her spirit. If I be not ashamed To kiss her now <u>I part</u> , may I not live!	= "that I am breaking up with her".
386	Wel. I see you go, as slyly as you think To steal away; yet I will pray for you: All blessings of the world light on you two, That you may live to be an aged pair! All curses on me, if I do not speak What I do wish indeed!	
388	Elder. If I can speak To purpose to her, I am a villain.	403-4: <i>speak to purpose</i> = speak plainly or to the point.
390	Lady. Servant, <u>away</u> !	= "lover, let's go!"
392	Mar. Sister, will you marry that inconstant man? Think you he will not cast you off to-morrow? To wrong a lady thus, looked she like dirt, 'Twas basely done. May you ne'er prosper with him!	408ff: Martha sympathizes with the forsaken Welford.
394	Wel. Now God forbid! Alas, I was unworthy! so I told him.	
396	Mar. That was your modesty; <u>too good for him</u> . –	= "you were actually <i>too good</i> for him".

<p>418 I would not see <u>your wedding</u> for a world.</p> <p>420 Lady. Choose, choose. – Come, <u>Younglove</u>.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">422 [Exeunt Lady, Elder Loveless, and Abigail.]</p> <p>424 Mar. <u>Dry up your eyes</u>, forsooth; you shall not think We are all uncivil, all such beasts as these. Would I knew how to give you a revenge!</p> <p>426 Wel. <u>So would not I</u>: no, let me suffer truly; That I desire.</p> <p>430 Mar. Pray, walk in with me; 'Tis very late, and you shall stay all night: 432 Your bed shall be no worse than mine. I wish I could but do you right.</p> <p>434 Wel. My humble thanks: 436 God grant I may but live to <u>quit</u> your love!</p> <p>438 [Exeunt.]</p> <p><u>ACT V, SCENE III.</u></p> <p><i>A Room in the House of Elder Loveless.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Enter Young Loveless and Savil.</i></p> <p>1 Young. Did your master send for me, Savil?</p> <p>2 Sav. Yes, he did send for <u>your worship</u>, sir.</p> <p>4 Young. Do you know <u>the business</u>?</p> <p>6 Sav. Alas, sir, I know nothing! 8 Nor am employed beyond my hours of eating. My dancing days are done, sir.</p> <p>10 Young. What art thou now, then?</p> <p>12 Sav. If you consider me in little, I 14 Am, with your worship's reverence, sir, a rascal; One that, upon the next anger of your brother,</p> <p>16 Must raise a <u>sconce</u> by the highway, and <u>sell switches</u>.</p> <p>18 My wife is learning now, sir, to weave <u>inkle</u>.</p>	<p>= ie. to Elder.</p> <p>= ie. Abigail.</p> <p>= Welford, crying, is playing his part well!</p> <p>= "not me".</p> <p>432: sharing a bed was common amongst friends in those days, and not necessarily sexual.</p> <p>= requite, ie. repay; Welford's role-playing has earned him a place in Martha's bed!</p> <p>= a title used by Savil to show his new-found respect for Young, as well as to acknowledge Young's new status as a knight.</p> <p>= ie. "why he sent for me?"</p> <p>11: Young is inquiring into Savil's exact status in the household; after all, he had been fired by Elder, though he is still permitted to eat there.</p> <p>15-6: Savil expects to get kicked out of the house at any moment.</p> <p>16: sconce = a small earthen fortification: Savil means he must build a pile of dirt to use as a vendor's stall.^{1,9} sell switches = ie. sell slender, flexible shoots cut from a tree by the side of the road.¹</p> <p>= linen strips or tape, or white thread.^{1,4}</p>
--	--

20	Young. What dost thou mean to do with thy children, Savil?	
22	Sav. My eldest boy is half a <u>rogue</u> already; He was born <u>bursten</u> ; and, your worship knows, That is a pretty step to men's compassions.	= beggar. ³ = probably meaning "ruptured", suggesting "deformed", which may more likely attract <i>men's compassions</i> . ³
24	My youngest boy I purpose, sir, to <u>bind</u> For ten years to a <u>gaoler</u> , to draw under him, 26 That he may shew us mercy in his function.	= ie. as an apprentice. ¹ = jailer. 26: if Savil and his family are tossed into prison at some point, they may receive better treatment if his son is working as an apprentice jailer!
28	Young. Your family is <u>quartered</u> with discretion. You are resolved to <u>cant</u> , then? where, Savil, 30 Shall your scene lie? 32 Sav. Beggars must be no choosers; In every place, I take it, but the stocks. 34 Young. This is <u>your</u> drinking and your whoring, Savil; 36 I <u>told</u> you of it; but your heart was hardened. 38 Sav. 'Tis true, you were the first that told me of it; I do remember yet in tears, you told me, 40 You would have whores; and in that passion, sir, You <u>broke out</u> thus; "Thou miserable man, 42 Repent, and brew three <u>strikes</u> more in a <u>hogshead</u> : 'Tis noon <u>ere</u> we be drunk now, and the time 44 Can tarry for no man." 46 Young. You're grown a bitter gentleman. I see, Misery can clear your head better than <u>mustard</u> . 48 I'll be a suitor for your keys again, sir. 50 Sav. Will you but be so gracious to me, sir, I shall be bound – 52 Young. You shall, sir, to your <u>bunch</u> again; 54 Or I'll miss foully. 56 <i>Enter Morecraft.</i> 58 More. <u>Save you</u> , gentlemen, save you! 60 Young. Now, <u>polecats</u> , what young rabbit's nest have you <u>to draw</u> ? 62 More. Come, <u>prithie</u> , be <u>familiar</u> , knight.	= housed: Elder is punning on <i>drawn and quartered</i> (<i>draw</i> appeared in line 25). = literally meaning to "use the jargon or whining voice of a beggar", here meaning simply to beg. ^{1,3} 30: a bit of self-reference to the stage. 32: this ubiquitous proverb seems to have first appeared in Heywood's 1546 <i>Proverbs</i> : "beggars shuld be no choosers." = ie. "what happens when you turn to". = ie. warned; Young is being a bit disingenuous here. 38-44: Savil reverses Young's meaning, bitterly suggesting that it was Young who talked him <i>into</i> such dissolute behavior. = ie. spoke. = the proportion of malt in ale. ¹ = cask. 43: <i>ere</i> = before. 43-44: <i>the time...no man</i> = this is the second time this popular adage has been used in our play; see Act IV.i.9-11. = <i>mustard</i> could be applied externally to relieve pain. ¹⁰ = Young agrees to ask Elder to give Savil his job back. = ie. Savil's family. 54: ie. Young is confident he can get Savil's job back. = "God save you", a customary greeting. 60: <i>polecats</i> = a carnivorous animal resembling a weasel; Young is basically calling Morecraft a predator. <i>to draw</i> = a hunting term, meaning to trace the steps of a given prey. ²⁰ 62: <i>prithie</i> = "I pray thee", ie. please. <i>familiar</i> = sociable. ¹

64	<i>Young.</i> Away, fox! I'll send for terriers <u>for you</u> .	64-65: Young continues his hunting references: now Morecraft is a <i>fox</i> . = ie. "to chase you away."
66	<i>More.</i> Thou art <u>wide</u> yet: I'll keep thee company.	= ie. "wide of the mark", from archery: Young fails to understand Morecraft's intent.
70	<i>Young.</i> I am about some business. <u>Indentures</u> , if you follow me, I'll beat you:	= contracts or deeds; ¹ Young is using <i>Indentures</i> vocatively, as a name for Morecraft. = another legal term, meaning "to annul". = head.
72	Take heed; as I live, I'll <u>cancel</u> your <u>coxcomb</u> .	= deceived. = Morecraft has given up his profession.
74	<i>More.</i> Thou art <u>cozened</u> now; <u>I am no usurer</u> . What poor fellow's this?	75: Morecraft indicates Savil.
76	<i>Sav.</i> I am poor indeed, sir.	
78	<i>More.</i> Give him money, knight.	
80	<i>Young.</i> <u>Do you</u> begin the offering.	= "why don't you".
82	<i>More.</i> There, poor fellow; here's an <u>angel</u> for thee.	= a coin worth 10 shillings. ³
84	<i>Young.</i> Art thou in earnest, Morecraft?	85: Young is stunned that the usurer would give someone money.
86	<i>More.</i> Yes, faith, knight; I'll follow thy example: Thou hadst land and thousands; <u>thou</u> spent'st,	= an early editor suggested adding <i>which</i> before <i>thou</i> , for the sake of the meter; Dyce agrees something dropped out. = ie. Young's wealth.
88	And flung'st away, and yet <u>it</u> flows in double: I purchased, wrung, and <u>wire-drawn</u> for my wealth,	= literally to draw out or elongate something like metal, a metaphor for "behaved parsimoniously"; ¹ the idiom "stretch one's dollar" comes to mind.
90	Lost, and was cozened; for which I make a vow, To try <u>all the ways</u> above ground, but I'll find A constant means to riches without <u>curses</u> .	= ie. "all possible means to get wealthy". = ie. being cursed by other people.
92	<i>Young.</i> I am glad of your <u>conversion</u> , Master Morecraft: You're in a fair <u>course</u> ; pray, <u>pursue</u> it still.	= a religious pun on "converting", applied to the Jewish Morecraft, who has converted to a life away from usury. 96: a hunting metaphor: as a greyhound would <i>pursue</i> game (<i>coursing</i>), Morecraft is encouraged to continue his new chosen path.
94	<i>More.</i> Come, we are all gallants now; I'll keep thee company. – Here, honest fellow, for this gentleman's sake, There's two angels more for thee.	
96	<i>Sav.</i> God <u>quit</u> you, sir, and keep you long in this <u>mind</u> !	= reward. = ie. frame of mind.
98	<i>Young.</i> Wilt thou <u>persever</u> ?	= ie. keep to his new course of behavior; <i>persever</i> was normally stressed on the second syllable.
100	<i>More.</i> <u>Till</u> I have a penny. I have <u>brave</u> clothes a-making, and two horses: Canst thou not help me to <u>a match</u> , knight?	= whilst, so long as. ⁹ = fine. = a wife, ie. a rich wife, like Widow.
102	I'll <u>lay</u> a thousand pound upon <u>my crop-ear</u> .	109: <i>lay</i> = bet. <i>my crop-ear</i> = back at Act III.ii.251-2, Elder threatened

110
112
114
116
118
120
122
124
126
128

1
2
4
6
8
10
12
14

Young. Foot, this is stranger than an Afric monster!

There will be no more talk of the Cleve wars

Whilst this lasts. Come, I'll put thee into blood.

Sav. [*Aside*]

Would all his darned tribe were as tender-hearted! –
I beseech you, let this gentleman join with you
In the recovery of my keys; I like
His good beginning, sir: the whilst, I'll pray
For both your worships.

Young. He shall, sir.

More. Shall we go, noble knight? I would fain be
acquainted.

Young. I'll be your servant, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V, SCENE IV.

A Room in Lady's House.

Enter Elder Loveless and Lady.

Elder. Faith, my sweet lady, I have caught you now,
Maugre your subtilties and fine devices.
Be coy again now.

Lady. Prithee, sweetheart, tell true.

Elder. By this light,

By all the pleasures I have had this night,
By your lost maiden-head, you are cozened merely;
I have cast beyond your wit: that gentlewoman
Is your retainer Welford.

Lady. It cannot be so.

to have the usurer criminally punished if he persisted in trying to recover his money from the Lovelesses, by whipping and having his ears nailed to a pillory; this line suggests that Elder's threats were not idle, and that Morecraft was indeed punished for slander.

= "by God's foot"; an act of Parliament in 1605 banned the blasphemous use of God's name on stage; hence such implied blasphemies became the norm in Elizabethan drama.

= in 1609, the Duke of *Cleves*, John William, died heirless and insane; an obscure little war over his duchy commenced between Catholic and Protestant factions, and was not settled until England and France intervened in 1614.¹⁰ Young suggests that the conversion of Morecraft into a generous gallant will replace the Cleve Wars as a topic of conversation.

= ie. get Morecraft a wife that will enter him into gentility (*blood*).¹

116: unfortunate but typical Jewish stereotyping.

= like to.

The Time: Elder and Lady were married; it is now the morning after their wedding night.

= in spite of .² = intricate schemes.

3: "go ahead and be disdainful of me now;" Elder seems to still hold a grudge against Lady.

7-9: in this elaborate oath, Elder swears on a trio of concepts.

= completely tricked.

= devised, schemed.³

= follower.¹

16	Elder. Your sister has found it so, or I mistake: Mark how she blushes when you see her next. Ha, ha, ha! I shall not <u>travel</u> now; ha, ha, ha!	= ie. to France.
18		
20	Lady. Prithee, sweetheart, Be quiet: thou hast angered me at heart.	
22	Elder. I'll please you soon again.	22: likely suggestive.
24	Lady. Welford!	24: Lady is not calling for Welford, but simply repeating his name in disbelief.
26	Elder. Ay, Welford. He's a young handsome fellow, Well-bred, and <u>landed</u> : your sister can instruct you	= an owner of property.
28	In his good <u>parts</u> better than I, by this time.	= qualities, again suggestive.
30	Lady. <u>Ud's foot</u> , am I <u>fetch'd over</u> thus?	= God's foot. = gotten the better of . ¹
32	Elder. Yes, i' faith; And over shall be fetch'd again, never fear it.	33: Elder is risqué again.
34		
36	Lady. I must be patient, though it torture me. You have <u>got the sun</u> , sir.	= gotten the upper hand or the advantage; the phrase derives from the advantage an army had when the sun was to its back, shining into the enemy's eyes. ¹
38	Elder. And the moon too; in which I'll be <u>the man</u> .	= ie. the man in the moon.
40	Lady. But had I known this, had I but surmised it, You should have <u>hunted</u> three <u>trains</u> more, before	41-42: "you would have needed (hunted here means "employed in hunting") three more snares or lures (trains) before you would have captured the target of your hunt (course , meaning herself)." ¹
42	You had come to the <u>course</u> ;	
	You should have <u>hanked</u> o' the bridle, sir, i' faith.	43: "you would have been entangled or caught (hanked) in your own bridle". ¹
44		
46	Elder. I knew it, and <u>mined</u> with you, and so <u>blew you up</u> . Now you may see the gentlewoman: <u>stand close</u> .	45: Elder employs the image of secretly digging a mine under one's enemy, as in a siege, and blowing it up . = "let's hide."
48	[<i>They retire.</i>]	
50	<i>Enter Welford in his own apparel, and Martha.</i>	
52	Mar. For God's sake, sir, be <u>private</u> in this business;	52-53: Martha worries for her reputation: what if it becomes known that she had spent the night with a man before she was married? private = secret.
	You have <u>undone</u> me else. Oh, God, what have I done?	= ruined. Note that while Welford will address Martha with the intimate and familiar thou , Martha, a nervous wreck, uses the formal you in addressing Welford to signal her need to keep a formal distance from her new lover, at least until her fears have been assuaged.
54		
56	Wel. No harm, I <u>warrant</u> thee.	= assure.
58	Mar. How shall I look upon my friends again? With what face?	

60 62	Wel. Why, e'en with that; Tis a good one, thou canst not find a better. Look upon all the faces thou shalt see there,	62-65: Welford explains that most women have slept with a man while unmarried, but no one can tell just by looking at them.
64 66	And you shall find 'em <u>smooth</u> still, fair still, sweet still, And, <u>to your thinking</u> , <u>honest</u> : those have done <u>As much as you have yet</u> , or dare do, mistress; And yet they <u>keep no stir</u> .	= pleasant. ² = "as far as you would know". = chaste. = ie. also slept with a man while unmarried. = make no fuss. ¹
68 70	Mar. Good sir, go in, and put your woman's clothes on: If you be seen thus, I am lost for ever.	
72 74	Wel. I'll <u>watch you for that</u> , mistress; I am no fool: Here will I tarry till the house be up, And witness with me.	= "protect or guard you against such a possibility". 72-73, 77-87: Welford gives Martha several options: (a) go back to bed with him; (b) agree to marry him; or (c) face scandal if she doesn't.
76	Mar. Good dear friend, go in!	The one thing he will not do is go back into his disguise. By <i>witness</i> , Welford means he wants their vows to marry to be heard by others, so as to make their betrothal more binding.
78 80	Wel. To bed again, if you please, <u>else I am fixed here</u> Till there be notice taken what I am, And what I have done. If you could <u>juggle</u> me into my womanhood again,	= "or else I will not budge from here". 80-83: if he were to change back into his woman's outfit, then Martha could credibly carry on as if Welford never existed, and leave Welford single again.
82 84 86	And so <u>cog</u> me out of your company, All this would be forsworn, and I again An <u>asinego</u> , as your sister left me. No; I'll have it known and <u>published</u> : then, If you'll be a <u>whore</u> , forsake me, and be shamed; And, when you can hold out no longer, marry Some <u>cast Cleve captain</u> , and sell bottle-ale.	= cheat. = ass or fool. ¹ = proclaimed. = ie. for sleeping with him without marrying him.
88 90	Mar. I dare not stay, sir: <u>use me modestly</u> ; I am your wife.	= cashiered soldier of the Cleve Wars; it is odd that Welford should refer to the <i>Cleve Wars</i> so soon after Young had done so in just the previous scene. = "treat me with decency." ¹ 90: Martha chooses option (b) above; they have likely made vows of marriage to each other, which in those days created a bond stronger than a mere engagement; indeed, they could call themselves man and wife; such a vow was even stronger if made in front of witnesses, making the vow legally and morally binding.
92	Wel. Go in; I'll <u>make up all</u> .	92: <i>make up all</i> = fix everything.
The Engagement of Martha and Welford: the entire episode of Welford's tricking Martha raises a whole host of questions; for example, how exactly did Welford reveal		

himself to be a man - which presumably occurred as he was removing his female disguise - without Martha screaming or running from the room? did Martha resist him at all? also, Welford's demand that she marry him, or else risk ruining her reputation by having her fornication become public knowledge, contains a sniff of blackmail.

While we are on the subject, a modern student of gender relations could write an entire thesis on all the kissing between Elder and Welford in the previous scene; after all, all the actors on the pre-Restoration stage were men (or boys);

I think we can accept that an actor of the era would just know that it was a part of his job to kiss other males when they are portraying members of the opposite sex; such kisses are necessarily part of the relationships between the genders, and the audience would easily and regularly suspend belief in seeing such acts of affection between males and females.

But in the case of Elder and Welford, the two characters "knew" they were both men as they nuzzled each other throughout the previous scene. We may end this discussion with the following observation, which is that the weird obsession with "gender issues" is a modern construct, and probably not one that came to mind all those centuries ago; in other words, we must be careful of imposing our contemporary ideas and biases on the unknowable men and women who populated England half a millennium ago.

94 [Exit Martha.]

96 **Elder.** [coming forward with Lady.]
I'll be a witness of your naked truth, sir. –
98 This is the gentlewoman; prithee, look upon him;

= obviously humorously suggestive.

98f: Elder addresses Lady.

This is he that made me break my faith, sweet;
100 But thank your sister, she hath soldered it.

= ie. vows to marry Lady.

= ie. united the *faith* that had been *broken* in the previous line.

102 **Lady.** What a dull ass was I, I could not see
This wencher from a wench! Twenty to one,

= tell.

= womanizer.

104 If I had been but tender, like my sister,
He had served me such a slippery trick too.

= ie. as sympathetic or solicitous to Welford.

105: "he would have seduced me too"; *slippery trick* is perhaps suggestive.

106 **Wel.** Twenty to one I had.

= Welford is confident!

108 **Elder.** I would have watched you, sir, by your good
patience,
110 For ferreting in my ground.

= guarded against.

= hunting with or like a ferret.¹

112 **Lady.** You have been with my sister?

114 **Wel.** Yes; to bring.

= Bond commented on the uncertain meaning of this line; perhaps he means "to produce progeny", as Elder's response suggests.

116 **Elder.** An heir into the world, he means.

118 **Lady.** There is no chafing now.

118: ie. there is no point in getting angry (*chafing*) now.

120 **Wel.** I have had my part on 't;
I have been chafèd this three hours, that's the least:

= Welford puns suggestively: *chafe* also means "to heat"

122	I am reasonable cool now.	and "to excite". ¹
124	Lady. Cannot you fare well, but you must <u>cry roast meat</u> ?	124: "must you actually boast (<i>cry roast meat</i>) ¹ of your success?"
126	Wel. He that fares well, and will not <u>bless the founders</u> , Is either <u>surfeited</u> , or ill taught, lady.	= allusion to the Catholic custom of praying for the souls of those who founded charities, monasteries, etc. ³ = ie. jaded or wearied with excess good fortune ¹
128	For mine own part, I have found so sweet a diet, I can commend it, though I cannot spare it.	
130	Elder. How like you <u>this dish</u> , Welford? I made a supper on 't, and fed so heartily, I could not sleep.	= ie. meaning Lady; Elder punningly takes up Welford's dining metaphor.
132		
134	Lady. By this light, had I but scented out your <u>train</u> , You had slept with a bare pillow in your arms, And kissed that, or else the bed-post, for any wife You had got this twelvemonth yet: I would have vexed you	= scheme. ²
136	More than a tired <u>post-horse</u> , and been longer <u>bearing</u> Than ever <u>after-game</u> at <u>Irish</u> was.	138: <i>post-horse</i> = messenger's horse. 138-9: <i>been longer...Irish was</i> = ie. "it would be a long time before I relented." <i>Irish</i> was a game similar to backgammon; <i>after-game</i> was a difficult strategy in which one forbore attacking early in the game, awaiting a more favourable opportunity; <i>bearing</i> referred to the removing of one's pieces after they have circled the board. ¹
138	Lord, that I were unmarrièd again!	
140		
142	Elder. Lady, I would not <u>undertake</u> you, were you Again a <u>haggard</u> , for the best <u>cast</u> of	142-5: in this extended metaphor, Elder uses various terms from falconry; he would not take Lady up in marriage (<i>undertake</i>) ¹ if she were once again single (<i>haggard</i> = wild adult female hawk) for a pair (<i>cast</i>) of young maidens (<i>sore</i> describes a young hawk that has not yet molted), since she is unable to keep hold of what she has (<i>tickle-footed</i> describes a hawk that does not have a secure grasp of its prey; to <i>truss</i> is to grasp and fly off with the prey). ^{1,3}
144	<u>Sore</u> ladies i' the kingdom: you were ever <u>Tickle-footed</u> , and would not <u>truss</u> round.	
146		
148	Wel. Is she fast?	147: Welford joins in the metaphoric fun: "is she held fast now?"
150	Elder. She was all night locked here, boy.	
152	Wel. Then you may <u>lure</u> her, without fear of <u>losing</u> :	151: <i>lure her</i> = "recall her with a lure"; a lure is a feathered apparatus attached to the end of a cord, used to recall a hawk. ¹ <i>losing</i> = ie. her flying away.
154	Take off her <u>cranes</u> – You have a delicate gentlewoman to your sister: Lord, what a pretty fury she was in, When she perceived I was a man!	= common plural form <i>creance</i> , the cord attached to a hawk to keep it from flying away while it is being trained. ^{1,4}
156	But, I thank God, I <u>satisfied her scruple</u> , Without the parson o' the town.	= appeased Martha's uncertainty or unease regarding their status, or the immorality of what they have done, or her reputation, with a likely extra meaning of "satisfied her sexually."
158		
160	Elder. What did ye?	
162	Wel. Madam, can you tell what we did?	161: Welford addresses Lady.

164	Elder. She has a shrewd guess at it, I see by her.	
166	Lady. Well, you may mock us: but, my <u>large gentlewoman</u> , My <u>Mary Ambree</u> , had I but seen into you,	= lewd or coarse. ² = ie. Welford, alluding to his disguise. = Mary Ambree was an English heroine of the liberation of Ghent from the Spanish in 1584; as described in ballads, she disguised herself as a soldier to be with her lover, also a volunteer soldier; when he was killed, she was made an officer, and led her men bravely. ²⁵ Her name became proverbial for a woman of "heroic spirit".
168	You should have had another bed-fellow, Fitter a great deal for your <u>itch</u> .	= ie. lust.
170	Wel. I thank you, lady; Methought it was well. You are so <u>curious</u> !	= fastidious, delicate.
172	Elder. <u>Get on your doublet</u> ; here comes my brother.	= ie. "get dressed".
174		
176	<i>Enter Young Loveless, his Lady, Morecraft, Savil, and Serving-men.</i>	
178	Young. Good morrow, brother; and all good to your lady!	
180	More. God save you, and good morrow to you all!	
182	Elder. Good morrow. – Here's a poor <u>brother of yours</u> .	= "brother-in-law of yours" (addressing Lady).
184	Lady. Fie, how this shames me!	
186	More. Prithee, good fellow, help me to a cup of beer.	
188	Ist Serv. I will, sir.	
190	[Exit Ist Servant.]	
192	Young. Brother, <u>what make you here</u> ? will this lady do? Will she? is she not <u>nettled</u> still?	= "what are you doing here?" = angry. ¹
194		
196	Elder. No, I have cured her. – Master Welford, pray, <u>know this gentleman</u> ; he is my brother.	= ie. make the acquaintance of Young.
198	Wel. Sir, I shall long to love him.	
200	Young. <u>I shall not be your debtor</u> , sir. – But how is't with you?	= ie. "I will not be remiss to return your love (ie. friendship)".
202		
204	Elder. As well as may be, man: I am married. <u>Your new acquaintance hath her sister</u> ; and all's well,	= ie. "your new friend Welford has married Lady's sister"
206	Young. I am glad on't. – Now, my pretty lady <u>sister</u> , How do you find my brother?	= sister , like brother , could be used to refer to one's in-law.
208		
210	Lady. Almost as wild as you are.	
212	Young. He'll make the better husband: you have <u>tried</u> him?	= tested; probably suggestive.
214	Lady. Against my will, sir.	213: Lady is still resentful.

<p>Young. <u>He'll make your will amends soon</u>, do not doubt it. –</p> <p>216 But, sir, I must entreat you to be better known To this <u>converted Jew</u> here.</p> <p>218</p> <p style="text-align: center;">220 <i>Re-enter First Serving-man, with beer.</i></p> <p>Ist Serv. Here's beer for you, sir.</p> <p>222</p> <p>More. And here's for you an angel. 224 Pray, buy no land; 'twill never prosper, sir.</p> <p>226 Elder. How's this?</p> <p>228 Young. <u>Bless you</u>, and then I'll tell. He's turned gallant.</p> <p>230 Elder. Gallant!</p> <p>232 Young. Ay, gallant, and is now called <u>Cutting Morecraft</u>: The reason I'll inform you at more leisure.</p> <p>234</p> <p>Wel. Oh, good sir, let me know him presently.</p> <p>236</p> <p>Young. You shall hug one another.</p> <p>238</p> <p>More. Sir, I must keep 240 You company.</p> <p>242 Elder. And reason.</p> <p>244 Young. <u>Cutting Morecraft</u>, <u>Faces about</u>; I must present another.</p> <p>246</p> <p>More. As many as you will, sir; I am for 'em.</p> <p>248</p> <p>Wel. Sir, I shall do you service.</p> <p>250</p> <p>More. I shall look for 't, in good faith, sir.</p> <p>252</p> <p>Elder. Prithee, good sweetheart, <u>kiss him</u>.</p> <p>254</p> <p>Lady. Who? that fellow!</p> <p>256</p> <p>Sav. Sir, will it please you to remember me? 258 My keys, good sir!</p> <p>260 Young. I'll do it <u>presently</u>.</p> <p>262 Elder. Come, thou shalt kiss him for our sport-sake.</p> <p>264 Lady. Let him come on, then; and, do you hear, do not Instruct me in these tricks, for you may repent it.</p> <p>266</p> <p>Elder. That at my peril. – <u>Lusty Master Morecraft</u>, 268 Here is a lady would <u>salute</u> you.</p>	<p>= ie. Young puns on <i>will</i>, meaning (1) "he will change your mind", and (2) "he will put you in a position to change your will soon, ie. by giving you children."</p> <p>= Young repeats his <i>conversion</i> joke.</p> <p>223-4: Morecraft again gives a monetary gift to the servant, and a bit of advice.</p> <p>226: Elder is stunned by Morecraft's transformation.</p> <p>= "bless yourself", ie. "cross yourself", the customary thing to do upon seeing a wonderful or miraculous thing.^{3,9}</p> <p>= swaggering.³</p> <p>235: "please introduce me to him right away".</p> <p>= military command: "about face", ie. "turn around".¹</p> <p>= as described earlier, a kiss was usually exchanged by strangers of the opposite sex meeting formally for the first time.</p> <p>257-8: Savil asks Young not to forget to ask Elder for his job back.</p> <p>= right away.</p> <p>264-5: a vague threat to Elder not to so cavalierly introduce her to other men, as she may become interested in them; the English custom of greeting new acquaintances with a kiss certainly could lead to potential embarrassment or confusion of feelings.</p> <p>= merry.¹</p> <p>= greet with a kiss.</p>
---	--

270	More. She shall not lose her longing, sir. <u>What</u> is she?	= who.
272	Elder. My wife, sir.	
274	More. She must be, then, my mistress.	274: Morecraft is being playful.
276	[<i>Kisses her.</i>]	
278	Lady. Must I, sir?	
280	Elder. Oh, yes, you must.	
282	More. And you must take This ring, a poor pawn of some fifty pound.	282-3: Morecraft gives Lady what may be described as a wedding gift.
284	Elder. Take it, by any means; 'tis <u>lawful prize</u> .	= the phrase describes the legally sanctioned appropriation of the equipment and goods of a captured enemy's ship, or of the ship itself.
286	Lady. Sir, I shall call you <u>servant</u> .	= Lady is playful in return; she designates Morecraft as one licensed to pay her extra attention, though she is also playing on servant's meaning "lover".
288	More. I shall be proud on 't. – <u>What fellow's that?</u>	= Morecraft gestures to one of the servants whose livery may be fancier than that of the rest of the help.
290	Young. My lady's coachman.	
292	More. There's something, my friend, for you to buy whips; and for you, sir; and you, sir.	
294	[<i>Gives money to the Servants.</i>]	
296	Elder. Under a miracle, this is the strangest I ever heard of.	
300	More. What, shall we play, or drink? what shall we do? Who will hunt with me for a hundred pounds?	
302	Wel. Stranger and stranger! – Sir, you shall find sport After a day or two.	304-5: Welford advises Morecraft that he will find entertainment with the others in due time.
304	Young. Sir, I have a <u>suit</u> unto you, Concerning your old servant Savil.	= request or petition.
306	Elder. Oh, for his keys; I know it.	
308	Sav. Now, sir, strike in.	= Savil reminds Morecraft of his promise to add his voice to the petition for his job.
310	More. Sir, I must have you grant me.	
312	Elder. 'Tis done, sir. – Take your keys again: But hark you, Savil; leave off the <u>motions</u> Of the flesh, and be <u>honest</u> , or else you shall <u>graze</u> again;	= impulses. = chaste. = ie. go hungry, so as to be forced to dine on grass to survive. = test, ie. give another chance to.
314	I'll <u>try</u> you once more.	
316	Sav. If ever I be <u>taken</u> drunk or whoring, Take off the biggest key i' the bunch, and open My head with it, sir. – I humbly thank your worships.	= caught.
318		
320		
322		
324		

326 **Elder.** Nay, then, I see we must keep holiday:
328 *Enter Roger and Abigail.*
330 Here's the last couple in hell.

332 **Roger.** Joy be amongst you all!
334 **Lady.** Why, how now, sir,
What is the meaning of this emblem?

336 **Roger.** Marriage,
An 't like your worship.
338 **Lady.** Are you married?
340 **Roger.** As well as the next priest could do it, madam.
342 **Elder.** I think the sign's in Gemini, here's such coupling.

344 **Wel.** Sir Roger, what will you take to lie from your
346 sweet-heart to-night?
348 **Roger.** Not the best benefice in your worship's gift, sir.

350 **Wel.** A whoreson, how he swells!
352 **Young.** How many times to-night, Sir Roger?
354 **Roger.** Sir, you grow scurrilous. What I shall do, I
shall do: I shall not need your help.
356 **Young.** For horse-flesh, Roger.
358 **Elder.** Come, prithee, be not angry; 'tis a day
360 Given wholly to our mirth.
362 **Lady.** It shall be so, sir.
Sir Roger and his bride we shall entreat
364 To be at our charge.
366 **Elder.** Welford, get you to the church:
By this light you shall not lie with her again
368 Till y' are married.
370 **Wel.** I am gone.
372 **More.** To every bride I dedicate, this day,

329: an allusion to a game called *barley-break*, in which a couple, while holding hands, had to catch either of two other couples, something like a game of tag; the couple they caught would then have to enter the area in between the other two, which location was called *hell*.^{1,3}

= the customary epigram at the end of a pastoral poem.³

337: "if it please your worship", a deferential remark.

= *Gemini* is a constellation, whose stars comprise the Greek twin brothers Castor and Pollux, and is hence used to mean "couple":¹ Elder's point is to emphasize all of the new *couples* that have been formed.

Gemini is also the third sign of the zodiac. With this in mind, Bond suggests *sign's* should be *sun's*.

= apart; Welford is being playful.

348: "I wouldn't accept even the best benefice you could grant me to give up spending tonight (Roger's wedding night!) with Abigail."

benefice = an appointment of an ecclesiastical position, such as vicar, with concomitant income from property.¹

= ie. with pride, but also dirty.

352: the dialogue is reaching its raunchiest level yet!

357: "to find you a whore, Roger."³

363-4: Lady and Elder will entertain the new bride and groom.

374 Six healths a-piece; and it shall go hard,
But every one a jewèl. Come, be mad, boys!

376 **Elder.** Thou'rt in a good beginning. – Come, who leads? –
Sir Roger, you shall have the van: lead the way.

378 Would every doggèd wench had such a day!

380 [Exeunt.]

FINIS.

= toasts. = "it will be difficult to accomplish this" (ie. 6 drinks for each of the 4 new brides).

= go first; when an army marched, the soldiers in the front were called the **van**.

378: a final pun, on the proverb "every dog has his day", originally in Heywood's *Proverbs*: "a dog hath a day".

The Authors' Invented Words

Like all of the writers of the era, Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher made up words when they felt like it, usually by adding prefixes and suffixes to known words, combining words, or using a word in a way not yet used before. The following is a list of words from *The Scornful Lady* that are indicated by the OED as being either the first or only use of a given word, or, as noted, the first use with a given meaning:

- courted** (as an adjective, meaning a wooed party)
- annotation** (meaning an inventory of goods seized by authorities)
- faggot-boat**
- filly** (applied to a young girl)
- fitchock or fytchock**
- gibship**
- gulp** (as a noun, applied figuratively, ie. to anything other than a swallow)
- hatchment**
- homilist**
- long bill**
- meeching** (as an adjective)
- out-snore**
- over-bid** (meaning to bid more than something is worth)
- paper** (as an adjective describing something as theoretical)
- pot-butter**
- purse** (as a verb, meaning to steal)
- rent-book**
- snap** (as a noun, meaning fragment); also the phrase **not a snap**.
- spa** (as a generic term, as opposed to the original geographical location of Spa in Belgium)
- strike** (as a noun, meaning a unit of measure of malt in ale)
- switch** (as a noun, meaning a shoot from a tree)
- tickle-footed**
- tickling** (as a noun, describing the catching of a trout by tickling it)
- twitter** (as a verb, meaning to quiver or tremble)
- van** (describing the foremost part of a moving group of persons)
- verdugo** (first to use this Spanish word in English literature)
- water-house** (meaning a boat)
- wedding-smock**
- well-moulded**
- wire-draw** (as a verb, meaning to behave parsimoniously)

The OED currently (November 2018) indicates that the word *hopelessly* also made its first appearance in English letters in this play, but research indicates that the word appeared earlier, in 1602.

Complete List of Footnotes.

Footnotes in the text correspond as follows:

1. *Oxford English Dictionary* (OED) online.
2. Crystal, David and Ben. *Shakespeare's Words*. London; New York: Penguin, 2002.
3. Bond, R. Warwick. *The Works of Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher*, Volume I. London: George Bell & Sons and A. H. Bullen, 1904.
4. Dyce, Alexander. *The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1879.
5. Holden, William P., ed. *The Yale Shakespeare: The Twelfth Night*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1922.
6. Parrott, Thomas Marc. *Chapman's Comedies*. London: George Routledge & Sons, 1914, p.786.
7. Colman, George. *The Dramatic Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. London: Printed for John Stockdale, 1811.
8. Herbermann, Charles G., et al., ed. *The Catholic Encyclopedia*. New York: Robert Appleton Co., 1917.
9. Weber, Henry. *The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. Edinburgh: James Ballantyne and Company, 1812.
10. *The Encyclopedia Britannica*. 11th edition. New York: 1911.
11. *Great Books Online* Website. *The English Poets*. New York, London: MacMillan and Co., 1880–1918; New York, Bartleby.com, 2013. *Michael Drayton*. Written by George Saintsbury. Retrieved 9/19/2016: www.bartleby.com/214/1009.html.
12. Stephen, Leslie and Lee, Sydney, eds. *Dictionary of National Biography*, Vol. 6. London: Smith, Elder & Co., 1885-1900.
13. *Glosbe* Website. *Latin-English Dictionary*. Retrieved 9/19/2016: <https://glosbe.com/la/en/Solamen%20miseris%20socios%20habuisse%20doloris>.
14. Timbs, John. *Curiosities of London*. London: Longman, Green, Reader and Dyer, 1868.
15. *Timeless Myths* Website. *Twelve Peers*. Retrieved 9/17/2016: www.timelessmyths.com/arthurian/peers.html.
16. Cleary, Chris, ed. *The Roaring Girl*. Retrieved 9/22/2016: <http://www.tech.org/~cleary/roar.html>.
17. *Poetry in Translation* Website. *Horace the Epistles*. Retrieved 9/23/2016: www.poetryintranslation.com/PITBR/Latin/HoraceEpistlesBkIEpII.htm#anchor_Toc98156392.
18. *M&H Coins* Website. Retrieved 9/24/2016: www.mhcoins.co.uk/coins/hammeredgold/james-i-1603-25_rose-ryal/.
19. Harding, Davis., ed. *The Yale Shakespeare: Measure for Measure*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1926.
20. Nares, Robert et al. *A Glossary*, etc. London: Reeves and Turner, 1888.
21. *Dictionary.com* Website. Retrieved 9/25/2016: <http://www.dictionary.com/browse/ecce-signum>.
22. *Greatsite.com* Website. Retrieved 9/25/2016: <http://greatsite.com/ancient-rare-bibles-books/bibles/fx1583/>.
23. Browne, R. (1719) and Bullokar John (1626). *The English Expositor*, 12th Ed. Printed for W. Churchill, London: 1719.
24. *Lostplays.org* Website. *Long Meg of Westminster*. Retrieved 9/26/2016: www.lostplays.org/lpd/Long_Meg_of_Westminster.

25. *fresnostate.edu* Website. *Mary Ambree*. Retrieved 9/30/2016: www.fresnostate.edu/folklore/ballads/OBB165.html.

26. Johnson, Samuel. *A Dictionary of the English Language*, 6th Ed. London: Printed for J.F. and C. Rivington, etc., 1785.

27. Bailey, Nathan. *An Universal Etymological English Dictionary*. London: Printed for T. Osborne etc., 1763.

28. *Elizabethan.org* Website. *Tiltes and Forms of Address*. Retrieved 11/04/2018: <http://elizabethan.org/compendium/13.html>.

29. Sugden, Edward. *A Topographical Dictionary to the Works of Shakespeare and His Fellow Dramatists*. Manchester: The University Press, 1925.

30. *Catholic News Agency* Website. *The Apocrypha?* Retrieved 9/15/2016: www.catholicnewsagency.com/resources/apologetics/bible/the-apocrypha/.